

The Book of 1 Peter

[Introduction \(1:1\)](#)

[Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation \(1:2 - 2:10\)](#)

[The Certainty of Our Salvation \(1:2 - 1:12\)](#)

[Elect According to the Foreknowledge of God \(1:2\)](#)

[Preserved – Proven – Predicted \(1:2 – 12\)](#)

[Predicted By the Prophets \(1:10-12\)](#)

[The Calling with Our Salvation \(1:13 - 2:3\)](#)

[The Chosen of Salvation \(2:4 - 10\)](#)

[Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men \(2:11 - 4:6\)](#)

[The Surrendered Life - The Witness to the World \(2:9-12\)](#)

[Honorable Living Before Unbelievers \(2:11 - 3:7\)](#)

[Submission of the Flesh - Principles of Fasting \(2:11\)](#)

[Study - The Principles of Fasting \(2:11\)](#)

[Link to Scriptures on Fasting](#)

[Link to Dr. Bill Bright's Guide to Fasting and Prayer](#)

[Submission to the Government \(2:11-17\)](#)

[Submission to Masters \(2:18 - 25\)](#)

[Submission in the Family \(3:1- 7\)](#)

[Wives \(3:1-6\)](#)

[Husbands \(3:7\)](#)

[Honorable Living Before Believers \(3:8 - 12\)](#)

[Submission to One Another \(3:8 - 12\)](#)

[Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering \(3:13 - 4:6\)](#)

[The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness \(3:13 - 17\)](#)

[The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness \(3:18- 22\)](#)

[The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness \(4:1 - 6\)](#)

[Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return \(4:7 - 5:14\)](#)

[The Responsibility of Christian Living \(4:7 - 11\)](#)

[The Rewards of Christian Suffering \(4:12 - 19\)](#)

[The Requirements for Christian Leadership \(5:1 - 4\)](#)

[The Realization of Christian Victory \(5:5 - 14\)](#)

Introduction (1:1)

(1 Peter 1:1 NKJV) Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, To the pilgrims of the Dispersion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

Peter's Life

Written by Peter / Credentials Questions

Written by Peter. There have been debates in the past, and even recent, that Peter could not have been the author of this epistle because it is too in-depth, and too doctrinally sound for a fisherman to write. This is nothing new for Peter's credentials have been questioned from the very beginning:

(Acts 4:13 NKJV) Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were uneducated and untrained men, they marveled. And they realized that they had been with Jesus.

They Hung Out w/Jesus / University Professor

How could they preach and teach with power, because they had been with Jesus. If you hang out with Jesus, you too will be a different man or woman of God.

I can remember being saved only about 2 years, and I had been spending the weekend with a friend and his family. The mother was a Religion Professor (but not a Believer), Masters Degree, at the local University for 25 years. We talked about world religions, spiritual things, but then the subject narrowed to Jesus. Someone asked the professor an in-depth question about the Lord, and I'll never forget, this University Professor of 25 years, points to me and says ask him, he would know better than me. How could a new believer of only 2 years know more than a college professor? Because I, you, we walk with him, spend time with Him. The world will marvel at our understanding of Him, and if they are honest with themselves, they will know it is because we spend time with Him. So here we are today.

Written 64AD

Written around 64AD, about 30 years now since Jesus had ascended into heaven.

Everything Changes After the Resurrection

Peter is so often summarized by the one who denied Jesus three times, true as it may be, he may have denied Jesus, but everything changes after the resurrection, and there was nothing that would ever come close to turning him from the Lord ever again. We will see that clearly in these two epistles that he writes.

The Life of Simon Peter

Peter's life is an open book for us to read; the highs and the lows:

1. Called also Simon Bar-Jona and Cephas
Matthew 16:16-19; Mark 3:16; John 1:42
2. A Fisherman
Matthew 4:18; Luke 5:1-7; John 21:3;
3. The Call of Peter by Jesus
Matthew 4:18-20; Mark 1:16-18; Luke 5:1-11
4. His Wife's Mother Healed
Matthew 8:14; Mark 1:29-30; Luke 4:38
5. An Apostle
Matthew 10:2; 16:18,19; Mark 3:16; Luke 6:14; Acts 1:13
6. An Evangelist
Mark 1:36-37
7. Confesses Jesus as Christ
Matthew 16:16-19; Mark 8:29; Luke 9:20; John 6:68-69
8. His Presumption in Rebuking Jesus
Matthew 16:22-23; Mark 8:32-33.
9. His Rebuking Jesus when the Throng was Pressing
Luke 8:45

10. His Rebuking Jesus by Refusing to Let Jesus Wash his Feet
John 13:6-11
11. He was Present at Healing of Jairus' Daughter
Mark 5:37; Luke 8:51
12. He was Present at the Transfiguration
Matthew 17:1-4; Mark 9:2-6; Luke 9:28-33; 2 Peter 1:16-18
13. He was in Gethsemane
Matthew 26:36-46; Mark 14:33-42; Luke 22:40-46
14. He Seeks the Interpretation of the Parable of the Steward
Luke 12:41
15. He Seeks the Interpretation of the Law of Forgiveness
Matthew 18:21
16. He Seeks the Interpretation of the Law of Defilement
Matthew 15:15
17. He Seeks the Interpretation of the Prophecy of the 2nd Coming
Mark 13:3-4
18. He Walks on Water
Matthew 14:28-31
19. He Was Sent with John to Prepare the Passover
Luke 22:8
20. He Calls Attention to the Withered Fig Tree
Mark 11:21
21. His Denial of Christ Foretold
Matthew 26:33-35; Mark 14:29-31; Luke 22:31-34
22. He Cuts off the Ear of Malchus
Matthew 26:51; Mark 14:47; Luke 22:50
23. He Follows Jesus to the High Priest's Palace
Matthew 26:58; Mark 14:54; Luke 22:54; John 18:15
24. His Denial of Jesus and His Repentance
Matthew 26:69-75; Mark 14:66-72; Luke 22:55-62
25. He Visits the Sepulcher
Luke 24:12; John 20:2-6
26. Jesus Sends Message to Him After Resurrection
Mark 16:7
27. Jesus Appears to Him After Resurrection
Luke 24:34; 1 Cor 15:4-5
28. He is Present at Another Appearance and Commissioned to Feed the Flock
John 21:1-23
29. He Abides in Jerusalem
Acts 1:13
30. He Makes Statement about Judas and Recommends Selecting A Replacement
Acts 1:15-22
31. He Preaches at Pentecost
Acts 2:14-40
32. He Heals the Impotent Man at Solomon's Porch
Acts 3
33. He is Accused by the Council and Gives His Defense
Acts 4:1-23
34. He is Present at Death of Ananias and Sapphira
Acts 5:1-11
35. He is Imprisoned and Scourged--Gives Defense
Acts 5:17-42
36. He Goes to Samaria
Acts 8:14
37. He Laid Hands on Disciples that They Might Receive Gifts
Acts 8:15-18

38. He Rebukes Simon
Acts 8:18-24
39. He Returns to Jerusalem
Acts 8:25
40. He Receives Paul
Gal 1:18; 2:9
41. He Visits Lydda and Heals Aeneas
Acts 9:32-34
42. He Visits Joppa--Simon, the Tanner; Raises Dorcas
Acts 9:36-43
43. He Has the Vision of Unclean Animals
Acts 10:9-16
44. He Preaches to Cornelius and His Household
Acts 10
45. He Explains His Visit to the Gentile Cornelius to Jewish Brethren
Acts 11:1-18
46. He is Present at the "Jerusalem Conference" on Circumcision
Acts 15:7-11
47. He Was Imprisoned and Delivered by an Angel
Acts 12:3-19
48. He Writes Two New Testament Epistles
1 Peter 1:1; 2 Peter 1:1

Burly Man / Impulsive / Spontaneous / Gentle- Precious

Peter, church tradition says was a big burly man. In fact in John 21 it says they are fishing after the resurrection, Jesus shows up and says cast your nets over there, the resultant was a catch so big that the nets were overflowing, but not breaking. Peter knows it is the Lord and he jumps in and swims to shore. It says the catch was so big that the others couldn't haul it into the boats and so they just dragged it shore. When they get there Jesus says bring me some of those fish so we might eat together, what does Peter do, he runs to the shoreline, grabs the net and it says by himself he dragged all the fish out of the water. He must have been a burly man, we also see that he gives the definition of "diving in" to something, for when he saw it was the Lord he dives in and swims to shore, he wasn't waiting for the boats. In the garden before the crucifixion we read about him cutting off the ear of the Chief Priests servant Malchus. So he was impulsive, he was spontaneous, he was burly, but he was also a gentle giant. I like this, this big burly man uses the word precious 7 times in his writings. How many men go around saying, "isn't that precious"

His Mouth / Highs & Lows

Early on in his walk with the Lord Peter's mouth got him into a lot of uncomfortable positions. ThHis life had some high highs, and some low lows.

Jesus asks the disciples who do people say that I am, then who do you say that I am.

(Matthew 16:15 NKJV) He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?"

(Matthew 16:16 NKJV) Simon Peter answered and said, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."

(Matthew 16:17 NKJV) Jesus answered and said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Bar-Jonah, for flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but My Father who is in heaven.

Good, good Peter.

Then Jesus say's I must die, and Peter rebukes Him, God;

(Matthew 16:21 NKJV) From that time Jesus began to show to His disciples that He must go to Jerusalem, and suffer many things from the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised the third day.

(Matthew 16:22 NKJV) Then Peter took Him aside and began to rebuke Him, saying, "Far be it from You, Lord; this shall not happen to You!"

(Matthew 16:23 NKJV) But He turned and said to Peter, "Get behind Me, Satan! You are an offense to Me, for you are not mindful of the things of God, but the things of men."

Duh, not good Peter.

Peter had some high highs, and some low lows. His mouth often got him in trouble. On the Mount of Transfiguration (Matt 17:1-9) he opens mouth and inserts foot, lets build 3 tabernacles, build a memorial. *(Matthew 17:4 NKJV) Then Peter answered and said to Jesus, "Lord, it is good for us to be here; if You wish, let us make here three tabernacles: one for You, one for Moses, and one for Elijah."*
I can picture Jesus just shaking His head.

Taking Truths Learned With & For Jesus

This letter/epistle is written some 30 years later, and Peter is taking the truths he learned while walking with Jesus, and the 30 years of living them faithfully, and he writes to them and to us, so that they and we may have hope. I might add, Peter did walk on water, maybe for only a few moments, but still enough to be a man who walked on water. He has faith and truths that he desires to impart to his readers.

Pilgrims Addressed

Pilgrims / Sown Seed

Verse 1 - To the pilgrims of the Dispersion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, Written to the pilgrims (or strangers) that were scattered/dispersed abroad. Pilgrim – means “one who comes from a foreign country into a city or land to reside there by the side of the natives”. Simply meaning they were believers living amongst unbelievers. But interesting this word for dispersed means to be sown like seed. We see God’s hand is the one sowing the seed, scattering them into these foreign lands so that they might be living epistles to those who do not know Him. Peter will dedicate almost half this book to the topic of “remembering our example before men”. God had sown them, and God still does it today, it is His covert operation, as He moves us around and into the lives of unbelievers. He does it in the work place, in the neighborhoods, in the youth activities you have to go to, in your schools, all the places you go. We are God’s CIA agents, Christians in Action, being sown as seed into the lives of others.

Purpose of the Epistle

Why Peter Writes / Remember / Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that!

Outline of 1 Peter 1

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.*

He writes to us so that we may be:

Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare.

Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind.

Strengthen – to make one strong

Settle – to lay a foundation

Theme – Suffering – Glory - Grace

First Peter is a letter of encouragement (1 Peter 5:12). The theme of suffering runs throughout the letter, mentioned some 16 times (1 Peter 1:11, 2;19, 20, 21, 23, 3:14, 3:17, 3:18, 4:1, 4:13, 4:15, 16, 19, 5:1, 5:10), but so also does the theme of glory, mentioned some 12 times (see 1 Peter 1:7-8, 11, 21; 2:12; 4:11-16; 5:1, 4, 10-11). One of the encouragement's that Peter gives suffering saints is the assurance that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory (1 Peter 1:6-7; 4:13-14; 5:10). This is possible only because the Savior suffered for us and then entered into His glory (1 Peter 1:11; 5:1). The sufferings of Christ are mentioned often in this letter (1 Peter 1:11; 3:18; 4:1, 13; 5:1).

But suffering does not automatically bring glory to God and blessing to God's people. Some believers have fainted and fallen in times of trial and have brought shame to the name of Christ. It is only when we depend on the grace of God that we can glorify God in times of suffering. Peter also emphasized God's grace in this letter. "I have written to you briefly, encouraging you and testifying that this is the true grace of God. Stand fast in it" (1 Peter 5:12, niv).

Grace

The word "grace" is used in every chapter (8 times total) of 1 Peter: 1:2, 10, 13; 2:19 ("thankworthy"), 20 ("acceptable"); 3:7; 4:10; 5:5, 10, 12. Grace is God's generous favor to undeserving sinners and needy saints. When we depend on God's grace, we can endure suffering and turn trials into triumphs. It is grace alone that saves us (Eph. 2:8-10). God's grace can give us strength in times of trial (2 Cor. 12:1-10). Grace enables us to serve God in spite of difficulties (1 Cor. 15:9-10). Whatever begins with God's grace will always lead to glory (Ps. 84:11; 1 Peter 5:10).

3 Themes Unite

As we study 1 Peter, we will see how the three themes of suffering, grace, and glory unite to form an encouraging message for believers experiencing times of trial and persecution. These themes are summarized in 1 Peter 5:10, a verse we would do well to memorize:

(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all grace, who called us to His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after you have suffered a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.

Hope Gives Us Strength

This confident hope gives us the encouragement and enablement we need for daily living. It does not put us in a rocking chair where we complacently await the return of Jesus Christ. Instead, it puts us on the battlefield, where we keep on going when the burdens are heavy and the battles are hard. Hope is not a

sedative; it is a shot of adrenaline, a blood transfusion of the Living Savior flowing through us. Like an anchor, our hope in Christ stabilizes us in the storms of life (Heb. 6:18-19); but unlike an anchor, our hope moves us forward, it does not hold us back.

The Big 3 – Peter – Paul - John

Peter has been called the Apostle of Hope. Peter is mentioned some 210 times in the NT, Paul some 160, and all the others combined mentioned around 115 times. As we study the themes of their writings we see the beautiful interwoven theme of - faith, hope, and love. Peter is the Apostle of Hope, Paul is the Apostle of Faith, and John is the Apostle of Love.

(1 Corinthians 13:13 NKJV) And now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love.

Easy to Follow Train of Thought

It is not difficult to follow Peter's train of thought. Everything begins with salvation, our personal relationship to God through Jesus Christ. If we know Christ as Savior, then we have hope! If we have hope, then we can walk in holiness and in harmony. There should be no problem submitting to those around us in society, the home, and the church family. Salvation and submission are preparation for suffering; but if we focus on Christ, we can overcome and God will transform suffering into glory. Peter gives us the Big Picture, he takes us out of our day-to-day lives, and shows us the big picture of what God is doing.

Persecution to Come

Written Before Intense Persecution Begins

These people will need to remember these things, for not only are they dispersed from their homeland, they will soon be put to fire of Nero. Peter is writing about 9 months before the intense persecution was going to begin against the Christians. For the most part the Roman Empire hadn't cared that much about the Christians, they just seem to be an annoyance to the Jews that caused them to be an annoyance to the Roman Empire. Most of the persecution against the Christians was coming from the Jews.

Rome in Flames /

Historical writings tell us, it was July 19, AD64 Rome was in flames. Though it was never known who started it, it was on such a scale that it was clear that it was not an accident. Many writings said it was Emperor Caesar Nero himself who set the blaze. They say as Rome burned he sat on his balcony twiddling his fingers, just watching it burn, with a harpist playing in the background. He was bored with his world, nothing left to conquer, so in his mind if he could burn Rome down, then he could rebuild it. Rebuild it bigger and more fabulous, a tribute for the ages to come, a legacy for him to be remembered. One example of what he did, Nero had his men burn down the "Circus Maximus" which held over 100,000 people, and then rebuilt it to hold over 300,000 people. Nero wanted a Rome City that would immortalize him.

Christians to Blame

As the citizens of Rome were outraged at the arson against their city, Nero accused the Christians of burning Rome, thus started the wave of persecution against the Christians. This persecution would run for almost 250 years and claim the lives of over 6 million Believers.

Twist Words

He would twist the words around the words the Christians would recite. Like, they always talk about baptism by fire, they are strange people for they talk about eating flesh and drinking blood (referring to commune). He pointed out that the Christians were causing disruption and breaking up of the family (what was happening here was that a spouse was getting saved and refused to join in the sexual orgies and perversion that was prevalent in the region).

Foxes Book

Foxes Book of Martyrs says that Nero would dip Christians into wax, tie them to a stake in his garden, light them on fire and race around them on his chariot, naked, laughing, screaming "light of the world", "light of the world". He would take live Christians and place them inside the gutted carcass of large dead animals and then let the dogs loose on the carcass.

Burn Own City / Timeline / Meeting with Paul

To burn your own city down is insane. But if we look at the timeline we can see the cause of his insanity. Paul's first imprisonment was approximately 60-62AD, it was before Caesar Nero (the Emperor of Rome) began his all out persecution against the Christians. Paul's second imprisonment here is approximately 66-67AD (thus this writing is approx. 66-67AD). The timeline shows that it was shortly after his meeting with Paul that he started an all out assault against the Christians.

God Prepares His People

We should always be ready, living in the light of His soon return, but history shows us that God repeatedly has prepared His people for major trials that were to come. These Christians who were dispersed were suffering already, but this would pale in comparison to the suffering that was to come. We see it here that Peter is writing to the Believers preparing them for this wave of persecution to come, We have seen it over and over in Christian and American history, even as late as September 11th, 2001. Maybe you are not aware of this, but I believe God prepared this nation for September 11th through one of God's greatest ministers of the 20th century. 7 years before the attacks God called him to fast for 40 days, and then God laid it upon him to have 2 million people fast for 40 days by the end of the year 2000, only 8 months before the attacks:

His name is Bill Bright, you may not know his name, but most everyone has heard his work, he is the one who brought the gospel into the simple evangelistic form we know as "The Romans Road - The 4 Spiritual Laws" He is best known for taking the Gospel of Jesus Christ to the intelligentsia of the world -- the students and professors of our universities. You may not recognize his face, but 139 million people around the globe know Jesus Christ as their Savior because of his ministry, Campus Crusade for Christ International. For 50 years, Campus Crusade's founder, Bill Bright has had one uncompromising passion -- take the Gospel of Jesus Christ to the world. That passion has resulted in 5 billion people hearing the life-changing message of Christ through the ministry of Campus Crusade. According to "Money Magazine," Campus Crusade has been labeled the most "efficient" religious organization in the U.S. It is also ranked as the largest religious charity in America. Today, Campus Crusade has 24,000 full-time employees -- the majority of which raise their own support. Another 553,700 people in 191 countries work as trained volunteers. And this ministry has produced the "Jesus Video" which has been translated into over 600 different languages, and seen by over 5 billion people in 234 countries. It is the most watched movie in the history of mankind. Bill Bright died July 19, 2001.

A Message from Dr. Bill Bright -

I believe the power of fasting as it relates to prayer is the spiritual atomic bomb that our Lord has given us to destroy the strongholds of evil and usher in a great revival and spiritual harvest around the world. Increasingly I have been gripped with a growing sense of urgency to call upon God to send revival to our beloved country. In the spring and summer of 1994, I had a growing conviction that God wanted me to fast and pray for forty days for revival in America and for the fulfillment of the Great Commission in obedience to our Lord's command.

At first I questioned, "Is this truly God's call for me?" Forty days was a long time to go without solid food. But with each passing day, His call grew stronger and more clear. Finally, I was convinced. God was calling me to fast, and He would not make such a call without a specific reason or purpose. With this conviction, I entered my fast with excitement and expectancy mounting in my heart, praying, "Lord, what do you want me to do?"

I believe such a long fast was a sovereign call of God because of the magnitude of the sins of America and of the Church. The Lord impressed that upon my heart, as well as the urgent need to help accelerate the fulfillment of the Great Commission in this generation.

As I began my fast, I was not sure I could continue for forty days. But my confidence was in the Lord to help me. Each day His presence encouraged me to continue. The longer I fasted, the more I sensed the presence of the Lord. The Holy Spirit refreshed my soul and spirit, and I experienced the joy of the Lord as seldom before. Biblical truths leaped at me from the pages of God's Word. My faith soared as I humbled myself and cried out to God and rejoiced in His presence.

This proved to be the most important forty days of my life. As I waited upon the Lord, the Holy Spirit gave me the assurance that America and much of the world will, before the end of the year 2000, experience a great spiritual awakening. This divine visit from heaven will kindle the greatest spiritual harvest in the history of the Church. But before God comes in revival power, the Holy Spirit will call millions of God's people to repent, fast, and pray in the spirit of 2 Chronicles 7:14:
If my people, who are called by my name, will humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn from their wicked ways, then I will hear from heaven and will forgive their sin and will heal their land.

The scope of this revival depends on how believers in America and the rest of the world respond to this call. I have spent fifty years studying God's Word and listening to His voice, and His message could not have been more clear.

This handy reference guide, *Seven Basic Steps to Successful Fasting and Prayer*, will help make your time with the Lord more spiritually rewarding. I encourage you to keep it with you during your fast and refer to it often because it gives easy-to-follow suggestions on how to begin your fast, what to do while you fast, and how to end your fast properly.

During my forty-day fast, God impressed me to pray that two million Christians in North America will fast for forty days by the end of the year 2000, and pray for national and worldwide revival and for the fulfillment of the Great Commission. I urge you to prayerfully consider this challenge.

Before you fast, I encourage you to read my book, *The Coming Revival: America's Call to Fast, Pray, and "Seek God's Face."* It will help equip you for the coming spiritual awakening. <http://www.billbright.com/howtofast/index.html>

I have this beeper next to me 24/7. It is in the event of another 9/11. The enemies of God are out there against this nation, it is a spiritual war regardless of what the media and politicians say it is. I really do not know what tomorrow may bring.

Peter's Death & Desire

Peter Crucified / Peter Wanted Man

Shortly after the writing of these epistles, Peter will be crucified; Church History (not Biblical) says that Peter was crucified upside-down because he did not feel worthy to be crucified in the same manner of His Lord. Peter was a wanted man, he was writing as someone who understood their struggles. Nero wanted to kill Peter, among many others I am sure. After walking 3 years with Jesus, and 30 years of walking for Jesus, many people wanted to see him dead.

Foxes Book of Martyrs says: *Among many other saints, the blessed apostle Peter was condemned to death, and crucified, as some do write, at Rome; albeit some others, and not without cause, do doubt thereof. Hegeppus saith that Nero sought matter against Peter to put him to death; which, when the people perceived, they entreated Peter with much ado that he would fly the city. Peter, through their importunity at length persuaded, prepared himself to avoid. But, coming to the gate, he saw the Lord Christ come to meet him, to whom he, worshipping, said, "Lord, whither dost Thou go?" To whom He answered and said, "I am come again to be crucified." By this, Peter, perceiving his suffering to be understood, returned into the city. Jerome saith that he was crucified, his head being down and his feet upward, himself so requiring, because he was (he said) unworthy to be crucified after the same form and manner as the Lord was.*

Feed My Sheep

The Lord gave Peter a clear assignment, "Feed My Sheep". We follow him through Acts, from the Day of Pentecost to becoming a pillar in the church. And now it is 30 years later and he is still doing what God called him to do, feed His sheep. May that be our story, that should the Lord tarry another day or decade, that we would be found still being faithful to the assignment He gave us. Here is a man that has walked the walk, we are wise to listen and learn from him.

Peter Desire to See Him Again

Both Peter's epistles are heavy laden with the focus, the Lord's return is near. It isn't hard for me to imagine Peter's desire to see the Lord's return. He was the second disciple called (after Andrew), he walked with Jesus for 3 years, he ate with him, sang with Him, laughed with Him, cried with Him. He watched Him go to the cross, he saw the empty tomb, he saw the risen Savior, and then he watched Him leave as He ascended into heaven to be seated at the right hand of the Father, and then from that day he waited. How many times he must have looked to the skies looking for Him, everyday waiting.

(Acts 1:9 NKJV) Now when He had spoken these things, while they watched, He was taken up, and a cloud received Him out of their sight.

(Acts 1:10 NKJV) And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as He went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel,

(Acts 1:11 NKJV) who also said, "Men of Galilee, why do you stand gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus, who was taken up from you into heaven, will so come in like manner as you saw Him go into heaven."

He writes to us, to encourage us as we wait, to hold fast, remember the things written to us by the prophets and apostles, to not lose hope, and to keep looking up. He did it for 30 years, I don't think we will have anything near that to go.

Peter writes to us so that our passion doesn't dim, and if it has to rekindle it. He writes to remind us of our "Great Salvation", Our Example Before Men, and that Our Lord's Soon Return. He writes to stir us up, to Light the Fire Again. This is a wonderful Book to Study.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:2 - 1:12)

Elect According to the Foreknowledge of God

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, "feeding His sheep".

The Dispersed

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, **perfect**, **establish**, **strengthen**, and **settle** you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unties these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare; *Established* – to set fast, confirm one's mind; *Strengthen* – to make one strong; *Settle* – to lay a foundation.

Starts with Doctrine / Foreknowledge of God / Stand Firm in the Trials & Failures

Peter starts with Doctrine, the certainty of our salvation. He is going to say we are elected according to the foreknowledge of God. He starts with this, because it is the foundation from which we build on, back to our theme. God builds this foundation so that when the trials of lie rage against us, when our failures are before us, we go and stand on our foundation, we are elected and secured in the Lord.

(1 Peter 1:1 NKJV) Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, To the pilgrims of the Dispersion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

(1 Peter 1:2 NKJV) elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, in sanctification of the Spirit, for obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace to you and peace be multiplied.

Paul / Ephesians / More Meat

Paul spoke on this back in Ephesians, and as we said these two epistles are laid our very much the same. Lets turn back to Ephesians 1:3-6. Ephesians gives us a little more meat to chew on in terms of this doctrine of election and predestination.

Ephesians / New Heights / Into the Heavlies

Ephesians has been called the Swiss Alps of the New Testament. We climb to see who we are in Christ, and we see that we are seated in the heavenly. 5 times in this book is the reference made...in the heavenly. Ephesians takes the Believer to heights they have never been before. Verse 1:3 is the Key verse to the Book, *(Eph 1:3 KJV) Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ.* This is where Ephesians wants to take us, into heavenly places with Christ; to show us the treasure of riches and blessings that are for every believer.

(Ephesians 1:3 NKJV) Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places in Christ,

(Ephesians 1:4 NKJV) just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love,

(Ephesians 1:5 NKJV) having predestined us to adoption as sons by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will,

(Ephesians 1:6 NKJV) to the praise of the glory of His grace, by which He has made us accepted in the Beloved.

Into the Heavlies / View from where He Sits / Our Position / Can't Claim

Today, if you will, God wants to take you up into the heavlies, and show you things from where He sits. He wants to show us our position in Christ, adopted as sons, and He guarantees the believers position with the word...predestined. Predestined, pre-determined, God planned these things before you were even born. He shows we are guaranteed to receive His spiritual blessings....and His guarantees are

spiritual blessings in themselves. God right from the start of this epistle wants to establish in us the security of our salvation. If you struggle with your salvation, then you'll never have the power to seize all your spiritual blessings God has for you until you resolve this issue. Today He says to you if you are feeling down, depressed, dry.....then let these words lift your soul, let them be Living Water that refresh your spirit, let them be a reminder to you.

4 Promises

Today we will see 4 promises for us as God shows us things from where He sits. 4 promises that will refresh your spirit, and show you your salvation is secure.

Before the foundation of the world you were pre-determined

- Promise 1: To be Chosen in Love
- Promise 2: To be Holy and Without Blame
- Promise 3: To be Adopted as His Child.
- Promise 4: To be the Praise of His Glory

Words So Big / Flags that Wave

God is making a promise to us today, He is given us a word here in Ephesians, "predestined", and in 1 Peter "elected", a word that when hard times comes, when we struggle with our salvation, that we look at these words and they are so big to us, that we will have no problem seeing them and remembering them for what they mean to us. They are flags that wave and we see them and remember.

Sept 13 1814 / British Navy /

The day was September 13, 1814, from the embankments of Fort McHenry looking out into the entrance to Baltimore harbor one would see British war ships determined to bring the infant nation to its knees. Although America had only recently miraculously won her independence from royal tyranny that sought to enslave the colonists into a world controlled by a hot-headed monarch determined to quash freedom of religious expression, Great Britain still controlled the seas with the largest, most powerfully Navy on earth - a Navy she used regularly to interdict American shipping, pillaging cargo and forcing sailors into involuntary sea duty aboard brutal frigates owned by the crown. Britain never imagined the infant America would dare to declare war to stop the oppression, but we did - boldly and justly, but with no real hope of victory.

France / Wash DC / Ft McHenry / The Flag / 42 by 30

Preoccupied by war with France, Britain paid little heed until, in 1814, having settled matters in Europe, she turned her attention and naval wrath on her former colonies, sailing with a mighty irresistible armada up the Chesapeake Bay and Potomac River, landing in Washington, where citizens fled in terror (including the Madisons), leaving the Brits to burn the White House and Treasury buildings to the ground. The armada then sailed back out to the Bay and north to Baltimore, planning a devastating crush that would bring the states to their knees and make them subject to the king once again. However, the Baltimoreans did not run; instead, embarrassed by their Washingtonian fellow citizens, they dug in and determined to fight valiantly to the last man if necessary. In preparation (in those days, people knew for weeks an invasion was on its way, and America had no Navy to stop the British armada) the commander of Fort McHenry, which guards the entrance to Baltimore harbor, ordered the largest American flag ever made sown for him - it measured 42 feet by 30 feet and was finished in a near-by warehouse by a team of seamstresses. Maj George Armistead, commander of the Fort, said I want Ft McHenry's flag to be large enough that the British will have no difficulty in seeing it from a distance

1800 / Black Sky / The Flag Still There

When the British armada opened fire on the helpless fort - the range of the ships' guns was far greater than that of the fort's - with a barrage of nearly 1,800 heavy rounds, the smoke blocked out the light of day, but, as you know the song, when it cleared, the giant fifteen stard banner was still waving in defiance. Meanwhile, a British invasion by land was met with the fierce determined opposition of the Baltimoreans and turned back. Each time the ships sailed closer to the fort, McHenry's guns drove them back. Finally, they gave up and sailed home, freedom was preserved, and British sea-going piracy

ceased. The infant nation, conceived in liberty and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal, not only survived, but also triumphed.

The Flag to us / Freedom / Sacrifice

FT McHenry ----a great battle fought to take back this nation, but victory was America's. As we look at this flag we are reminded we are free because the battle won there. For America, this flag is a daily reminder of the freedom we enjoy, and has lasted for over 200 years.

God's Flag / These Words / Victory on Calvary / Security / No Problem Seeing It

God gives us a flag, in a sense, one that has lasted for over 2000 years and will never fade or tatter, He gives us this word – predestined, pre-determined, elected– he spoke it before the foundation of the world. He says when you hear this word, remember this word, let it be a reminder to you of the battle that was won on Calvary, and the promise of your freedom, and your destiny, forever. Maj George Armistead, commander of the Fort, said I want Ft McHenry's flag to be large enough that the British will have no difficulty in seeing it from a distance. God says I'm giving you a word large enough that you will have no difficulty seeing it from a distance. When the enemy and this world attack. When all seems hopeless, when the day seems like night, and the attack seems like it will never end, when you question if you are saved, may we remember this word....predestined, pre-determined....guaranteed we are adopted.

Chosen In Love

Promise 1: Before the foundation of the world you were pre-determined to be chosen in love
Ephesians 1:4 NKJV) just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love,

Before Spoke the Earth / Said I love You

Before the foundation of the world, before the earth was without form or void, before He created out of nothing, Before God said let there be.....He said I love you Ray, I've chosen you.

Love can not live alone, true love has to be shared.

Chosen In Love / Emotion tied To It / Black White Pages

"Chose us, ..In Love" We were chosen in love, there was an emotion tied to this action by God. When we say we love someone, there is something in our heart that stirs, it is from that stirring in our heart that make us say these words. And if we could step away from the black and white pages, and just hear the heart of God, hear Him saying because my deep love for you, I want you to be with me for ever, come live with me

Instead Love Story – Argument / Debate / Lost Emotional Connection / A PROMISE

Sadly, instead of predestination being a love story, many men in the church have removed the emotional tie, and turned it into an argument. For 100's of years men have argued If God chose, then can I reject or am I forced to receive, this is the great Calvinism vs Arminianism debate. When I was in Bible college students would argue over it, the church I came from had a split over it. Arguing over such foolishness, their minds took over for their hearts, and they lost the emotional connection behind it. It is not a Debate, but a Promise.

Ephesians 5

You have to read Ephesians 5 to gain a feel for the emotion tied here:

(Eph 5:25 KJV) Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;

(Eph 5:26 KJV) That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word,

(Eph 5:27 KJV) That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

God Chooses His Bride / Something Happens In My Heart / Brush Hair – Walk – Hold You

God says I'm choosing you like a man chooses his bride. He says when I see you something happens in my heart. When we are away from each other my heart longs for you, things just are not right when we are apart. You were meant to be with me. We are meant to say goodnight and good morning. Rest in

my arms, let me brush the hair off your face so I can see you, let my arms hold you. Let me tell you how much I love you, let us walk together side by side.

Verse 4 / I see Perfection – Not Your Faults

Verse 4.....that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love, When I look at you, I see perfection. The scriptures say love covers a multitude of sins. When God looks at you he doesn't see all you faults and failures, all he sees is his bride, the one who makes his heart move.

Verse 6 / Accepted – Fully Embrace / No Makeup Needed / Considers it Victory

Verse 6 says we are "accepted in the beloved" The word accepted here means embraced. This word is "full gathering in". When God accepts us, He accepts all that comes with us. He accepts my shame and sin - fully. It is amazing to think, that someone would fight for that, and consider it victory when He got it. Why does God embrace us? Because we are in the beloved. It is not only that I am in Christ, but Christ is in me, when God looks at me, he sees me in the beloved. Jesus is lovely, without spot or blemish, there is no make-up needed.

Grasp It / Spiritual Thermometer

If people could just grasp this truth, they would run to, not from, when they fall. I like this, I think I'll use while I'm witnessing on the streets. When it finally sinks in, we will enjoy our relationship with the Father. God is saying I will never divorce you, I will never leave you, turn my back on you. Yes what you may do sometimes will hurt me, but come to me and we will work through this together.

You will throw away your spiritual thermometer on how you are gauging yourself, and enjoy your relationship with God, which in turn will take you into a deeper spiritual growth and walk.

- God says when you see this word Predestined...remember I pre-determined before you were born that you would be chosen in Love.

Holy Without Blame

Promise 2: Before the foundation of the world you were pre-determined to be Holy and without blame

Ephesians 1:4 NKJV) just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love,

(Ephesians 1:5 NKJV) having predestined us to adoption as sons by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will,

Can't Explain – Explain Away / Family Secret

*Predestined.....*You can't explain predestination, but people will try to explain it away. If you try to explain it away you lose your heart. Predestination is a family secret.

Pro-Horizon / Destiny Is Past Tense

Predestined - Greek word pro-horizon. God knows our horizon before we do. Predestined, our destiny is already planned. We are destined for greatness, is a phrase so often used today in the world, but for the believer, it is past tense, our destiny is a done deal, and we live it daily.

Remove the Comma / God the Performer

God chose us first. This verse could also read, "in love having predestined us". Man put the commas in, so it could read both way, and either way it is beautiful. I rest in that because the alternative is me choosing God. I don't like that because that leaves me as the performer, and I can't perform at a level to be accepted by Him

2 Peter 3:9 / Rev 3

I don't want to spend too much time on this, but let me point out; No where in the Scriptures does it say that God predestined anyone to Hell. In Revelation 3 everybody starts out with their name in the Lambs book of Life. It says their name was blotted out of the book:

(2 Peter 3:9 NKJV) Is for those who chose not to believe: The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some count slackness, but is longsuffering toward us, not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance.

Romans 8 / God Knows – Doesn't Pick Losers

(Romans 8:29-30 NKJV) Is for those who chose to believe:

(Romans 8:28 NKJV) And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are the called according to His purpose.

(Romans 8:29 NKJV) For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren.

(Romans 8:30 NKJV) Moreover whom He predestined, these He also called; whom He called, these He also justified; and whom He justified, these He also glorified.

(Romans 8:31 NKJV) What then shall we say to these things? If God is for us, who can be against us?

God doesn't pick losers. He foreknew: God knows who will respond to His love. And He knows who will reject His love. God will not force His love upon anyone. Why is the person who rejects Jesus Christ allowed to live? Because you have to play it out. They will be given every opportunity to respond.

Entrance to Heaven / Let Theologians Wrestle – It's a A Promise

The entrance to the gates to heaven read 'For whosoever will', and then after you enter you read the back of the sign, 'Chosen before the foundation of the world.' Let the theologians wrestle this out, but as for me, it is a promise to believe, I'm His, and He is mine.

When We Blow It

But what happens when we blow it? *Remember Verse 4 says we shall be holy and without blame;* This is a done deal, a given, God is making a statement here, not a command. We are blessed in Christ, chosen, destined to be like Him, holy without blame:

(Philippians 1:6 NKJV) being confident of this very thing, that He who has begun a good work in you will complete it until the day of Jesus Christ;

Claim Your Inheritance / Roll Away the Stone

Verse 4 - We shall be, - sadly we don't seize this promise now, we go the long hard way. God has predestined us for greatness, for glory, for all spiritual blessings in the heavenly, don't cheapen it, claim your family inheritance. Don't live like a pauper, constantly being brought down by the same sins, claim your inheritance.....Roll away the stone and live. Live like the Kings kid. I came that they may have life and that more abundantly. You can't enjoy the mountain view, when your down in the valley stuck in the mud.

British Nobleman / Fall Back On / Bought on Strength of Estate / News Reporter

Some years ago a British nobleman died, leaving an estate which, as he had no children, would go to the nearest heir. This man living far away was the nearest heir, living in poverty, and just eking out a struggling existence when they found him and gave him the news that the estate was his. It was his all the time but he didn't know it. What did he do when he found out? Did he say that's good, I'll have something to fall back on and someday I'll go look into it. No, he went down town, and on the strength of the estate bought a new suit and a ticket, and started to Great Britain. The news reporter asked him where he was going? He answered, to take possession of my estate.

- God says when you see this word Predestined...remember I pre-determined before you were born that you would be Holy and without Blame

Adopted as His Child

Promise 3: Before the foundation of the world you were pre-determined to Adopted as my child.

(Ephesians 1:5 NKJV) having predestined us to adoption as sons by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will,

Enter By Regeneration – Born Again / Adoption Our Position

We enter into God's family by regeneration, that is by being born-again. Adoption shows not how we enter in, but how we are involved in the family. The word adoption in the Greek means, "adult standing."

In regeneration a Christian becomes a child of God; in adoption he receives the position of a son of God. *(John 1:12-13 NKJV) But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, to those who believe in His name: who were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God*

Roman Law / Lost Old Family / Old Debts Cancelled / Could Not Disown

In Roman law, "When the adoption was complete it was complete indeed. The person who had been adopted had all the rights of a legitimate son in his new family and completely lost all rights in his old family. In the eyes of the law he was a new person. So new was he that even all debts and obligations connected with his previous family were abolished as if they had never existed." And, you could not disown an adopted child, only a child naturally born.

Son of Prostitute / Go Claim Your Inheritance / 2 Time Governor

In old times a master would adopt a slave and make them joint heirs in ownership. A true story from way back. A man grew up as the son of the town prostitute. The town joke was him; they would say, "who does he look like? They would not allow him in the stores or on the walkway. He started to go to go to church, and he met the Pastor. The Pastor said, "you know who you look like? And the man thought to himself, the last person I expected it from was the Pastor. Pastor said, "you look like the son of God, go claim your inheritance." He was two times elected governor of his state.

Family Resemblance

We are all created in God's image, but it is not until we are adopted will there be a family resemblance.

Verse 5 - According to the good pleasures of His will,.. God's determination to save us and make us Holy delights Him; it pleases God to bless us.

As adopted children we have an inheritance that we are called to claim. The whole Book of Ephesians elaborates on what we are heirs to.

(Ephesians 1:3 NKJV) Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places in Christ,

- God says when you see this word Predestined...remember I pre-determined before you were born that you would be Adopted as my child

Praise of His Glory

Promise 4: Before the foundation of the world you were pre-determined to be the Praise of His Glory
(Ephesians 1:5 NKJV) having predestined us to adoption as sons by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will,
(Ephesians 1:6 NKJV) to the praise of the glory of His grace, by which He has made us accepted in the Beloved.

For His Good Pleasure / People Can Only Praise Him

Why has God blessed us, predestined us, chosen us, and adopted us? For His good pleasure and so there is no bragging on our behalf, It's all God's Grace. When people look at us they can only praise God. God's determination to save us and make us holy delights Him; it pleases God to bless us -----God is always for us, never doubt that.

Coach Super Bowl Team / Look At the Church Today

You can't say God is not gracious when you look at His people. I like Jon Courson's analogy. If I was to coach the Ravens to the Super Bowl, everybody would say it was because I had the likes of Ray Lewis, and Jamel Lewis. But if I put together a team from this church, and we went to the Super Bowl and beat the Giant's, then everybody would be saying what a great coach I am taking a bunch of no names, becoming world champs. It rally is amazing that the Gospel breaks through to the world inspite of the church.

praise of the glory - Now this word glory isn't the bright-light glory, rather it means recognition. When we recognize the grace He has shown us, we marvel, we are blown away that the Creator of the Universe loves us that much. As we sit and reflect on that, we can't help but to break out in praise.

Praise of the Glory / Applauding Praise / Standing Ovation

praise of the glory - This word praise isn't the singing praise, rather it is the applauding praise. The standing ovation. The, "Lets give up for the Lord" praise. I think the reason the marriage supper of the Lamb is so long will be because of the applause. We will all be sitting at the banquet table talking, and then Jesus is going to walk out to the head table, and then we are all going to stand to our feet and give a thunderous applause that will just go on and on, as we are in our new bodies, looking about heaven, we won't be able to stop. We will know why we are there, because of His grace. To the praise of the glory of His grace.

- God says when you see this word Predestined...remember I pre-determined before you were born that you would be the Praise of my Glory

Conclusion:

How do I apply all this to my life....dwell on it meditate on it until it becomes a part of your very being. No matter what you are going through today or tomorrow, we have a most awesome promise from God. When we consider these things, and grasp just a piece of it, we can't help but praise our Lord, and a revival starts in our heart, and overflows to our family, friends and the world around us.

We are adopted sons and daughters, we have a home in heaven and here on earth. We have been given the opportunity to touch heaven, and change earth. I see it happening here in this church, people are excited about Jesus, and people around us are noticing.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:2 - 1:12)

Preserved – Proven – Predicted (1:1 – 1:12)

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, *"feeding His sheep"*.

The Dispersed

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unites these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- Strengthen – to make one strong;
- Settle – to lay a foundation.

Small Town in Maine

A small town in Maine was proposed for the site of a great hydroelectric plant. A dam would be built across the river and as the waters backed-up, the town would be submerged. When the project was announced the towns people were given many months to arrange their affairs and relocate. During those months a curious thing happened. All home improvements ceased. No painting was done, no repairs were made to the buildings, roads, or sidewalks. Day by day the whole town got shabbier and shabbier. A long time before the waters came, the town looked uncared for and abandoned, even though the people had not yet moved away. One citizen explained: where there is no faith in the future, there is no power in the present. The town was cursed with hopelessness because it had no future. Much the same for Christians, when they forget their future, lose sight of their future, they lose hope, and they can become like that small town in Maine. Peter writes to us today to remind us of our future, that is a blessed and guarantee. He starts with the Certainty of our Salvation:

Outline: The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:2 - 1:12)

- Preserved by the Power of God (1:2 - 5)
- Proven by the Trials of Persecution (1:6 - 9)
- Predicted by the Prophets of God (1:10 -12)

Preserved by the Power of God (1:2 - 5)

(1 Peter 1:1 NKJV) Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, To the pilgrims of the Dispersion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

(1 Peter 1:2 NKJV) elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, in sanctification of the Spirit, for obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace to you and peace be multiplied.

Elected / Family Secret

Peter starts immediately by reminding these people and us that we are elected. Elect means “to pick out or select”. Election is a family secret. It is not something that can be explained to a non-family member, an unbeliever. The unbeliever needs to give their life to the Lord, and then they will understand that they were chosen by God from the foundations of the world:

(Ephesians 1:3 NKJV) Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places in Christ,

(Ephesians 1:4 NKJV) just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love,

(Ephesians 1:5 NKJV) having predestined us to adoption as sons by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will,

(Ephesians 1:6 NKJV) to the praise of the glory of His grace, by which He has made us accepted in the Beloved.

Foreknowledge

By His Foreknowledge:

(Romans 8:28 NKJV) And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are the called according to His purpose.

(Romans 8:29 NKJV) For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren.

(Romans 8:30 NKJV) Moreover whom He predestined, these He also called; whom He called, these He also justified; and whom He justified, these He also glorified.

(Romans 8:31 NKJV) What then shall we say to these things? If God is for us, who can be against us?

Wishing None Should Perish

Our salvation is a done deal from God's perspective. God can see the beginning from the end, He knows who will chose, and who will reject. But, He will never destined anyone to hell for hell is man choosing his own free-will not to enter into a personal relationship with Jesus Christ:

(2 Peter 3:9 NKJV) Is for those who chose not to believe: The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some count slackness, but is longsuffering toward us, not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance.

God Stays Active

God stays active in the work of salvation in every person even though we were chosen before the foundations of the world. Notice the Trinity here in this verse:

*(1 Peter 1:2 NKJV) elect according to the foreknowledge **of God the Father**, in sanctification **of the Spirit**, for obedience and sprinkling of the blood **of Jesus Christ**: Grace to you and peace be multiplied.*

In terms of our salvation, the working out of our salvation in regards to the Father, Son and Holy Spirit:

- Of God the Father: *elect according to the foreknowledge **of God the Father*** - As the Father is concerned, based on His foreknowledge, we are saved before the foundations of the world.
- Of Jesus Christ: *for obedience and sprinkling of the blood **of Jesus Christ*** - As the Son is concerned, we were saved the day He went to the Cross. Today you will be with me in Paradise He said to the thief beside Him (Luke 23:43). From the foundation of the world Jesus knew He would go to the cross for you, and for me. Our salvation could not be secured until He finished His work upon the cross; and nothing could deter Him from that. When Jesus arose from that prayer time in the garden of Gethsemane (Matt 26:36-46), His face was steeled towards Jerusalem and the cross, nothing could keep Him from that appoint. His love for you, His love for me, was too great that He could ever turn back. Do you see that today, will you celebrate that today, will you slow down to mediated on that today.
- Of the Spirit: *in sanctification **of the Spirit*** - As the Spirit is concerned, that happened for me an evening in February 1991, in my bedroom in Cocoa Beach Florida. The Spirit started His work with me in early January. He drew me to the Scriptures; He placed it in my mind that I had read books on Jet Engine Technology, books on Aerodynamics, books on Business Management, but I had never read "The Book", about the God who created me. In my mind (looking back and seeing it was the Holy Spirit speaking to me) I asked myself, how could I read all this books and do all this studying, just so I can get a job, but at age 27 never had read the Bible that is about the Creator of the Universe, the book about how I can have eternal life, how can that be so. How about you today, those who have not made a personal commitment to Him, have you read this book yet? How can you make a decision if you haven't read this whole Book? Have you studied books to make a living, but not this Book about living? I challenge you to do so. I did, and the Lord consumed me, for 3 hours every night I would read this book. I started in Genesis and just read strait through, I didn't understand much, but I did understand was that He is a Mighty God, and when I got into Matthew, it all came together, I saw that I was a sinner, and that I had offended the Mighty and Holy God, and that I needed help. When I read the account of the crucifixion, it came over me like a flood, You died because of my sin, I remember saying over and over, it is not fair, you suffered shame, the pain, for my selfish sin. I am so glad that life is not fair, for if it was, I, you, we would all be going to hell. Thank you Jesus, for leaving the throne, enduring the garden, and triumphing over the cross. The Holy Spirit showed me these things, revealed them to me, my sin and a need for the Savior. So salvation as it concerns the Spirit, it

was settled February 1991, in my bedroom in Cocoa Beach Fl, no altar call, just a call, a visit from God Himself.

Verse 2 - Grace to you and peace be multiplied. - God's grace and peace are living, because He is living. They are multiplied because they are new everyday, He doesn't give us day old grace, mercy and peace, but fresh and new pouring of His love out unto us.

(Lamentations 3:22 NKJV) Through the Lord's mercies we are not consumed, Because His compassions fail not.

(Lamentations 3:23 NKJV) They are new every morning; Great is Your faithfulness.

(Lamentations 3:24 NKJV) "The LORD is my portion," says my soul, "Therefore I hope in Him!"

(1 Peter 1:3 NKJV) Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to His abundant mercy has begotten us again to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

(1 Peter 1:4 NKJV) to an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled and that does not fade away, reserved in heaven for you,

(1 Peter 1:5 NKJV) who are kept by the power of God through faith for salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

Living Hope / Dreams Fade / Spiritual Life Grows / No Mid-Life Crisis / Just Pilgrims

Verse 3- begotten us again to a living hope: My hopes and dreams of life slowly start dying out. The dreams of playing Pro football, or a job that would allow me to retire at 40, they all slowly start to die out. I look in the mirror and see the lines in my face becoming more distinct, my hair thinning, my waist doesn't even remember the days of the size 32's. All these things are fading, but for my spiritual life, it is a living hope, a growing hope, all which is opposite of the world. They are living, and every day they get stronger and stronger, clearer and clearer the more I understand His Word, His grace, His love. Through these things more and more every day I rest in the finished work of the cross, and I start enjoying my relationship with the Lord and realizing this life is fading away, it isn't about this life, but my life with Him. Christians should never be a people that wrestle with a mid-life crisis, for we should be a people that realize we are just strangers, pilgrims, just passing through.

An Inheritance / Rub 2 Pennies – Still Wealthy

Verse 4 - to an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled and does not fade away, reserved in heaven for you: God has an inheritance for us, which is incorruptible, undefiled, and does not fade away; it is reserved in heaven for us. If you do not have two pennies in your pocket to rub together, you are still wealthy, rich beyond any millionaire.

Tax Collector

A tax assessor came one day to a rather poor man to determine the amount of taxes he would have to pay. "What do you possess?" he questioned. "Oh, I am very wealthy," replied the man. "List your possessions, please," the assessor instructed. The man of God replied,:

- "First, I have everlasting life- (John 3:16).
- Second, I have a mansion in Heaven- (John 14:2).
- Thirdly, I have peace that passeth understanding- (Philippians 4:7).
- Fourth, I have joy unspeakable- (1 Peter 1:8).
- Fifth, I have divine love that never faileth- (1 Cor 13:8).
- Sixth, I have a faithful, pious wife- (Proverbs 31:10).
- Seventh, I have healthy, happy, obedient children- (Exodus 20:12).
- Eighth, I have true, loyal friends- (Proverbs 18:24).
- Ninth, I have songs in the night- (Psalm 42:8).
- Tenth, I have a crown of life awaiting- (James 1:12).

The tax collector closed his book and said, "Truly, you are a very rich man, but your property is not subject to taxation."

Peter Reminds You

Peter said I write to you so that you might remember these things!!

Kept by God / kept in the Trials

Verse 5 - who are kept by the power of God: - We are kept by the power of God. The inheritance is waiting for us, we are being kept, by the power of God. It is not you holding on to Him, but Him holding on to you. Peter is telling these people, your salvation is certain, because of Him, He will keep you, so when the fires come upon you, remember you are kept. Your inheritance is kept in heaven, just who do you think is going to sneak in there and steal it. This word for kept means "to guard by military garrison", used in reference to guarding a city. Our inheritance, which is our place in heaven, is a certainty.

Proven by the Trials of Persecution (1:6 - 9)

(1 Peter 1:6 NKJV) In this you greatly rejoice, though now for a little while, if need be, you have been grieved by various trials,

Rejoice In What

Verse 6 - In this you greatly rejoice: What are we to greatly rejoice in? Greatly rejoice because you are kept. Rejoice even though you are going through trials.

Grieved – Matt 26 / God Concerned In Your Trial

This word for grieved is the same word used in Matthew 26 when Jesus was in the garden sweating drops of blood. Peter isn't diminishing the reality of what they are going through, but he says it is only for a season, and you are going to heaven. What is your trial? Whatever it is, God doesn't diminish it and He is greatly concerned and interested in anything and everything you are going through. Peter used the word "manifold," which literally means "variegated, many-colored." He used the same word to describe God's grace in 1 Peter 4:10. No matter what "color" our day may be—a "blue" Monday or a "gray" Tuesday—God has grace sufficient to meet the need. We must not think that because we have overcome one kind of trial that we will automatically "win them all." Trials are varied, and God matches the trial to our strengths and needs.

Don't think It Strange – Not Immune

In chapter 4, Peter said "Don't think trials and suffering as something strange", that Christians should be immune from them:

(1 Peter 4:12 NKJV) Beloved, do not think it strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened to you;

(1 Peter 4:13 NKJV) but rejoice to the extent that you partake of Christ's sufferings, that when His glory is revealed, you may also be glad with exceeding joy.

Modern Gospel / Jesus Improve Your Flight

Here is the problem with the modern gospel, people say "give your life to Jesus Christ and you will be happy and have eternal life." Or as we say, Jesus will improve your flight.

1st Passenger / Improve Flt / Weight – Uncomfortable – Laughing / Disillusionment

Two men are seated on a plane, the first is given a parachute and told to put it on as it will improve his flight. He is skeptical at first because he can't see how wearing a parachute on the plane can improve his flight. After a time he decides to experiment and see if the claim was true. As he puts it on he notices the weight upon his shoulder and finds he has difficulty seating upright. However he consoles himself with the fact that he was told that the parachute will improve his flight, so he decides to give the thing a little time. As he waits he notices some of the other passengers are laughing at him for wearing a parachute on the plane and he begins to feel somewhat humiliated. As they continue to point and laugh at him he can stand it no more and slinks in his seat, unstraps the parachute and throws it to the floor. Disillusionment and bitterness feels his heart because as far as he is concerned he was told an outright lie.

2nd Passenger / Going to Jump / Doesn't Notice Weight / Comforted

The second man is given a parachute and listen to what he is told: He is told to put it on because at any given moment he will be jumping 25,000 feet out of the plane. He gratefully puts the parachute on and doesn't even notice the weight of it upon his shoulder nor that he can sit upright. His mind is consumed with the thought of what would happen to him if he jumped without the parachute.

Analyze Motive / 1st / Improve Flt – Resultant / Bitterness

Now let's analyze the motive and results of each passenger's experience. The first man's motive for putting on the parachute was solely to improve his flight. The result of his experience was that it was humiliating by the passengers, he was disillusioned, and somewhat bitter against those who gave him the parachute, and as far as he is concerned it will be a long time before someone gets one of those things on his back again.

2nd / Deep Rooted Peace / Withstands Mockery / Grateful

The second man put the parachute on to escape the jump to come. Because of the knowledge of what would happen to him without it he has a deep-rooted joy and peace in his heart knowing that he is safe from sure death. This knowledge gives him the ability to withstand the mockery of the other passengers, and his attitude towards the one who gave him the parachute is of a heart felt gratitude.

Modern Gospel / Love – Joy – Peace / Temptation – Trib – Trials / Offended at Word / Bitter

Now listen to what the modern gospel says: "put on the Lord Jesus Christ and He will give you love, joy, peace, fulfillment and lasting happiness; in other words, Jesus will improve your flight." So the sinner responds and in an experimental fashion puts on the Savior to see if the claims are true. What does he get? The promised temptation, tribulation, and persecution - the other passengers mock him. So what does he do, he takes off the Lord Jesus Christ, He is offended for the Word's sake, he is disillusioned and somewhat bitter, and quite rightly so, he was promised peace, joy love, fulfillment and lasting happiness; and all he got was trials and humiliation. His bitterness is directed at the people who gave him the so-called Good News, and his situation is now worse than the first.

Not Improved / Have to Jump / Not Happiness – But Righteousness / Joy is Fruits / Backslidders

Instead of preaching Jesus will improve the flight, we must warn the passengers that they are going to have to jump out of the plane. When the sinner understands the consequences for breaking God's law, then he will flee to the Savior to escape the wrath that is to come. The issue is not one of happiness, but one of righteousness. It doesn't matter how happy sinners are, without the righteousness of Christ they perish in the day of wrath. Peace and joy are fruits of salvation, but they are not to be used as draw cards for salvation. If we continue to use them as draw cards, sinners will respond with an unpure motive, lacking repentance. We will be guilty of creating backslidders, or worse, false converts.

Delivered From Wrath to Come / Look Forward to Inheritance to Come / Have peace

The second passenger had joy and peace in his heart because he knew that parachute was going to save him from sure death. As a believer I have joy and peace in believing that the righteousness of Christ will deliver me from the wrath that is to come. In the trials and suffering of life, I can have peace and an expectant hope of my inheritance to come.

People, we are talking about a Holy and Awesome God. Grace is used in every chapter of this epistle, it is used 8 times in this short epistle. Grace (G-R-A-C-E) is God's Riches At Christ's Expense. Grace is to be celebrated, but it is not to be abused:

(Romans 6:14 NKJV) For sin shall not have dominion over you, for you are not under law but under grace.

(Romans 6:15 NKJV) What then? Shall we sin because we are not under law but under grace? Certainly not!

(Romans 6:16 NKJV) Do you not know that to whom you present yourselves slaves to obey, you are that one's slaves whom you obey, whether of sin leading to death, or of obedience leading to righteousness?

Peter / The Big Picture

Throughout this epistle Peter keeps bringing us back to the Big Picture, and he will say go for the glory. Peter wants to bring the people back, bring us back, that in the midst of a hard life, we are to remember this Great Salvation, and then everything is put into perspective.

(1 Peter 1:7 NKJV) that the genuineness of your faith, being much more precious than gold that perishes, though it is tested by fire, may be found to praise, honor, and glory at the revelation of Jesus Christ,

(1 Peter 1:8 NKJV) whom having not seen you love. Though now you do not see Him, yet believing, you rejoice with joy inexpressible and full of glory,

(1 Peter 1:9 NKJV) receiving the end of your faith; the salvation of your souls.

Genuineness of faith / Artificial Layers Stripped Away / Trials Bring Glory – Which Bring Security

Verse 7 - that the genuineness of your faith: Genuineness of your faith, true faith is that which is still in place after the artificial layers have been stripped away by trials and testing. Trails bring out the glory of God in a believer and when you see the glory of God revealed in you, you will be secure in your salvation.

Trials Only a Season / Eye on Clock – Hand on Thermostat

Trials do not last forever; they are “for a season.” When God permits His children to go through the furnace, He keeps His eye on the clock and His hand on the thermostat. If we rebel, He may have to reset the clock; but if we submit, He will not permit us to suffer one minute too long. The important thing is that we learn the lesson He wants to teach us and that we bring glory to Him alone.

The Goldsmith / See Face

Peter illustrated this truth by referring to the goldsmith. No goldsmith would deliberately waste the precious ore. He would put it into the smelting furnace long enough to remove the cheap impurities; then he would pour it out and make from it a beautiful article of, value. It has been said that the Eastern goldsmith kept the metal in the furnace until he could see his face reflected in it. So our Lord keeps us in the furnace of suffering until we reflect the glory and beauty of Jesus Christ. Peter may have been referring back to what Job had said about his trial:

(Job 23:10 NKJV) But He knows the way that I take; When He has tested me, I shall come forth as gold.

Rom 8:28 / Know – Not See

Christians the Bible doesn't say that we see all things work together for good, but we know all things work together for good:

(Romans 8:28 NKJV) And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are the called according to His purpose.

2 things of Trails

Notice two things that trials (struggles and sufferings) do:

- Strengthen our Faith in the Lord (verse 7 - the **genuineness** of your faith)
- Deepens our Love for the Lord ((verse 8 - having not seen you love)

1.) Strengthen our Faith in the Lord (verse 7 - the **genuineness** of your faith)

Lord Knows Our Craving / Brittle Metals / Bridge – Skyscraper / Disaster All who Dwell

Verse 7 – Your Faith Tested by Fire: The Lord knows what we are craving, and that is that we will become more like Him. Metals with impurities are brittle and weak. They cannot be used in any major structural job. You cannot build upon steel that has impurities. Imagine a bridge built with steel that is brittle and weak, that resultant would be disastrous; imagine a skyscraper built with metal that is brittle and weak, who would want to dwell in that place.

Finally get This / Stop Complaining – Rejoice / Reflection of His Face

Christian when you finally get this, when you finally understand why you go through these struggles, you will learn to rejoice in them, rather than rebelling in them, complaining about them. I'm not saying you will be skipping and jumping, but you will rejoice - thank you Lord for what you are doing in my life, as you conform me into your imagine, as you bring forth your glory in me as you bring it to the surface. That the Lord will see His reflection in us.

Romans 5:1-5 tells us that our hope is that God is at work, therefore I can wait it out, trust Him through it, knowing that he is working in them. Hope will let me endure:

(Romans 5:1 NKJV) Therefore, having been justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, (Romans 5:2 NKJV) through whom also we have access by faith into this grace in which we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

(Romans 5:3 NKJV) And not only that, but we also glory in tribulations, knowing that tribulation produces perseverance;

(Romans 5:4 NKJV) and perseverance, character; and character, hope.

(Romans 5:5 NKJV) Now hope does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out in our hearts by the Holy Spirit who was given to us.

2.) Deepens our Love for the Lord ((verse 8 - having not seen you love)

Never Seen Still Love / Something Wonderful in the Trials

Verse 8 - whom having not seen you love: They had never seen the Lord, yet they still love Him. Peter is saying I saw Him, you haven't, yet you love Him just the same as I do. You see gang God does something wonderful in the trials, for through them He draws us closer to Himself, which draws us deeper in love with Him. Which in turn shows us the certainty of our salvation, as we see that He loves us and never will forsake us.

Dan 3 / Never Seen – Until the Trial / new Understanding – Certainty of Salvation

You know the story, but let me add a little more on to it (Daniel 3). Meshach, Shadrach, Abednego, they are going through the fiery trial. Nebuchadnezzar says turn the heat up 7 times hotter. But as they wait and watch for the incineration, instead they see the appearance of the fourth, one like the Son of Man. The Lord appeared to the three, and the world watching. They were in the trial because they followed the Lord, even though they had never seen Him; and it is in the trial that they finally saw Him. I have found it is the same for us; it is in the trials that I see the Lord in a way that I had never saw Him before. I have a new revelation of the Lord, a new understanding of His character and attributes. They show me the certainty of my salvation.

I'd Rather Be In Fire /

I would rather be in the fire and have the revelation and commune with the Lord, then out of the fire where it is cool and comfy, nice and easy, but not having that closeness with Him, not seeing Him, not sensing Him. Out of the fire I so often see that I am pursuing this or involved in that, and I am drawn away.

Predicted by the Prophets of God (1:10 -12)

(1 Peter 1:10 NKJV) Of this salvation the prophets have inquired and searched carefully, who prophesied of the grace that would come to you,

(1 Peter 1:11 NKJV) searching what, or what manner of time, the Spirit of Christ who was in them was indicating when He testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glories that would follow.

(1 Peter 1:12 NKJV) To them it was revealed that, not to themselves, but to us they were ministering the things which now have been reported to you through those who have preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven; things which angels desire to look into.

Prophets Searched – We Understand / 2 Messiahs / 1st Coming – 2nd Coming

The prophets searched out the things we understand. For them they saw two Messiahs and it confused them. They didn't understand, but we do. They would have given anything to know what we do. We have seen the Messiah from the other side of the cross. Look what we get; we can put the Scriptures together and understand the suffering Messiah and Victorious Messiah. We can understand His first coming and His Second.

Prophecy Unfolds / Israel – Roman – The Mark / Confirmation – I am Kept

That should be enough, but we even get to watch prophecy unfold before our very eyes. I watch the events of the world, and it just makes me more and more sure of my salvation. The prophecy of the rebirth of Israel, the re-emergence of Roman Empire, the Mark of the Beast, all these things are just more and more confirmation that this book is true, down to the last jot and tittle, and I am kept by His power, and He will come get me one day, or if it be, he will be standing to meet me.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:2 -12)

Predicted By The Prophets (1:10 – 12)

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, "feeding His sheep".

The Dispersed

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unites these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- Strengthen – to make one strong;
- Settle – to lay a foundation.

The Certainty of Our Future

In verses 10-12, Peter is making the point, you want to know the certainty of your future, look to the past. When you see the fulfillment of the Lord's First Coming, then you will be certain of His Second Coming. First He came as the Suffering Messiah to die for the sins of the world, next He will come as the Victorious Messiah, coming to claim His people, and judge all who have rejected Him. He is coming for you, He is coming for me, because He says He will, for His Word is perfect.

(1 Peter 1:10 NKJV) Of this salvation the prophets have inquired and searched carefully, who prophesied of the grace that would come to you,

(1 Peter 1:11 NKJV) searching what, or what manner of time, the Spirit of Christ who was in them was indicating when He testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glories that would follow.

(1 Peter 1:12 NKJV) To them it was revealed that, not to themselves, but to us they were ministering the things which now have been reported to you through those who have preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven; things which angels desire to look into.

Definition of Prophesied

Verse 10 - who prophesied of the grace that would come to you,- Prophesied – (propheteuo, prof-ate-yoo'-o;); to foretell events, divine, speak under inspiration, exercise the prophetic office:--prophesy.

God Reveals Beforehand

God reveals before hand what He will perform:

(Amos 3:7 NKJV) Surely the Lord GOD does nothing, Unless He reveals His secret to His servants the prophets.

(Isaiah 46:9 NKJV) Remember the former things of old, For I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like Me,

(Isaiah 46:10 NKJV) Declaring the end from the beginning, And from ancient times things that are not yet done, Saying, 'My counsel shall stand, And I will do all My pleasure,'

(Isaiah 48:3 NKJV) "I have declared the former things from the beginning; They went forth from My mouth, and I caused them to hear it. Suddenly I did them, and they came to pass....."

(Isaiah 48:5 NKJV) Even from the beginning I have declared it to you; Before it came to pass I proclaimed it to you, Lest you should say, 'My idol has done them, And my carved image and my molded image Have commanded them.'

(Isaiah 44:6 NKJV) "Thus says the LORD, the King of Israel, And his Redeemer, the LORD of hosts: 'I am the First and I am the Last; Besides Me there is no God.

(Isaiah 44:7 NKJV) And who can proclaim as I do? Then let him declare it and set it in order for Me, Since I appointed the ancient people. And the things that are coming and shall come, Let them show these to them.

Jesus Confirms

Jesus confirms this is so what has been spoken by the prophets. That all Scripture points to Him:

(Matthew 5:17 NKJV) "Do not think that I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I did not come to destroy but to fulfill.

(Luke 24:27 NKJV) And beginning at Moses and all the Prophets, He expounded to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself.

(Luke 24:44 NKJV) Then He said to them, "These are the words which I spoke to you while I was still with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the Law of Moses and the Prophets and the Psalms concerning Me."

Only This Book is Bold Enough

Only this book has the boldness to prophesy. 300 prophecies of Jesus Christ fulfilled, and I am not talking about the several hundred other prophecies as they relate to Israel, empires, the Church, and other areas. Twenty-five percent of this book speaks of prophecies. And to date, not one has yet to fail. (See Notes at end of this study for a listing of all the OT prophecies fulfilled by Jesus.)

It All Began Back in the Garden / From Paradise to Prison – back to Paradise:

It all begins, back in the book of beginnings, the Book of Genesis. The prophecy is given of Satan wounding Jesus (which we know will be the cross), but Jesus have the victory as He would rise from the dead have victory and dominion over sin and death:

(Genesis 3:15 NKJV) And I will put enmity Between you and the woman, And between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, And you shall bruise His heel."

(Genesis 3:15 noted) And I (God) will put enmity (hostility/hatred) Between you (satan) and the woman (mankind), And between your seed (demons) and her Seed (Jesus); He (Jesus) shall bruise your (satan) head, And you (satan) shall bruise His (Jesus) heel."

Just a note here, the Seed is in the man, not the woman, so already from the start there is the hint of the virgin birth.

Baseline / No doubt He walked this earth / look at Historical writings

Lets start with a baseline. There is no doubt a man named Jesus walked this earth, there are too many historical facts that support that He did. If you really want to prove something out, go to an unbiased source that has no gain or loss in the matter and see what they said; there are many secular (non-Christian) historical writings that write about this Jesus, the history books reference Him. History books tell of the brutal Roman persecution of the Christians (the followers of Jesus); even the Jewish historical writings reference Jesus, even though they didn't believe He was the Messiah, just that he claimed to be the Messiah.

Newsweek / Divided Time / George Washington

Today in our secular media, almost all are anti-Christian, they concur that a man name Jesus walked on this earth 2000 years ago. Time, Newsweek, ABC News, they don't question His existence; they agree that there is too much documentation in existence that Jesus could have been a myth or a hoax. The whole world lives on a calendar based on Him, BC and AD. Just as no one alive today has seen George Washington, we all believe in this room that he existed and was our first President, why because of all the historical writings about him.

Man or God / Teacher or Messiah / God or a lunatic

Jesus Christ, was he a man?, or the God-man?, for the facts are in, He walked on this earth. His walk on the earth was so radical that He divided time (BC and AD); a man so radical that He claimed to be God; He claimed that He is the only way to heaven (John 14:6). Now some claimed He was a good teacher, a good man, but He was not God. He could not be a good man if He claimed to be God, and was not God. A good man cannot be someone who leads people astray. It comes down to one of two things, either Jesus Christ was God, or He was a lunatic, for only a lunatic would make such claims if they were not true.

Top 8

His Birth & Lineage

- 1.) The Messiah would be born in Bethlehem. Micah 5:2a / Matthew 2:1-2
- 2.) The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Isaiah 9:7 / Matthew 1:1

His Environment & the World Setting

- 3.) The Messiah would be announced to his people 483 years, to the exact day, after the decree to rebuild the city of Jerusalem. Daniel 9:25 / John 12:12-13
- 4.) The Messiah would be killed before the destruction of the temple. Daniel 9:26c / Matthew 27:50-51
- 5.) The Jew's authority to administer capital punishment would be gone when the Messiah arrived. Genesis 49:10c / John 18:31

His Death

- 6.) The Messiah would be sacrificed on the same mountain where God tested Abraham. Genesis 22:14 / Luke 23:33
- 7.) The Messiah's back would be whipped. Isaiah 53:5c Matthew 27:26
- 8.) The Messiah's hands and feet would be pierced. Psalm 22:16c Matthew 27:38

All facts that can be backed up by historical writings

His Birth & Lineage

1.) The Messiah would be born in Bethlehem. Micah 5:2a / Matthew 2:1-2

(Micah 5:2 NKJV) "But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, Though you are little among the thousands of Judah, Yet out of you shall come forth to Me The One to be Ruler in Israel, Whose goings forth are from of old, From everlasting."

(Matthew 2:1 NKJV) Now after Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, behold, wise men from the East came to Jerusalem,

(Matthew 2:2 NKJV) saying, "Where is He who has been born King of the Jews? For we have seen His star in the East and have come to worship Him."

700 years Prior / Messiah Born in Bethlehem / 1 in 100,000

In approximately 700 B.C. the prophet Micah named the tiny village of Bethlehem as the birthplace of Israel's Messiah (Micah 5:2). The fulfillment of this prophecy in the birth of Christ is one of the most widely known and widely celebrated facts in history. Historical writings say the population of Bethlehem was around 7,000. they estimate the worlds population was 700 million. So the chance of being born in Bethlehem was 1 in 100,000.

2.) The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Isaiah 9:7 / Matthew 1:1

(Isaiah 9:6 NKJV) For unto us a Child is born, Unto us a Son is given; And the government will be upon His shoulder. And His name will be called Wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace.

(Isaiah 9:7 NKJV) Of the increase of His government and peace There will be no end, Upon the throne of David and over His kingdom, To order it and establish it with judgment and justice From that time forward, even forever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.

(Psalms 89:3 NKJV) "I have made a covenant with My chosen, I have sworn to My servant David:

(Psalms 89:4 NKJV) 'Your seed I will establish forever, And build up your throne to all generations.' " Selah

(Matthew 1:1 NKJV) The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the Son of David, the Son of Abraham:

Line of Judah – David / 1 in 12

There are many, many passages speaking of Jesus lineage. From Abraham, Issac, and Jacob; through the line of Judah (which King David is through), through King David. There were twelve tribes of Israel, so Jesus had a 1 in 12 chance in being through the line of David. Those are pretty good odds, but then compound that with having to be born in Bethlehem, and the odds are increasing greatly.

His Environment & the World Setting

3.) The Messiah would be announced to his people 483 years, to the exact day, after the decree to rebuild the city of Jerusalem. Daniel 9:25 / John 12:12-13

*(Daniel 9:25 NKJV) "Know therefore and understand, **That from the going forth of the command To restore and build Jerusalem Until Messiah the Prince**, There shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks; The street shall be built again, and the wall, Even in troublesome times.*

(Daniel 9:26 NKJV) "And after the sixty-two weeks Messiah shall be cut off, but not for Himself; And the people of the prince who is to come Shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. The end of it shall be with a flood, And till the end of the war desolations are determined.

(Daniel 9:27 NKJV) Then he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week; But in the middle of the week He shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, Even until the consummation, which is determined, Is poured out on the desolate."

(John 12:12 NKJV) The next day a great multitude that had come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

(John 12:13 NKJV) took branches of palm trees and went out to meet Him, and cried out: "Hosanna! 'Blessed is He who comes in the name of the LORD! The King of Israel!"

***Please see the study notes from 2 Thessalonians chapter 2 for a detailed explanation of this subject.

500 BC / Weeks = Years

Some time before 500 B.C. the prophet Daniel proclaimed that Israel's long-awaited Messiah would begin his public ministry 483 years after the issuing of a decree to restore and rebuild Jerusalem (Daniel 9:25-26). The Hebrew word for "weeks" used here is *shabua* meaning "a unit of measure." We have the blessings of all the Scriptures and all the history books that we know this is talking about years

The Years Calculated

Here in verse 25 we see a total of 69 seven year periods ($62 + 7 = 69$) ($69 \times 7 = 483$ years) (173,880 days) before the Messiah would come. The last 7-year period will be talked about in verse 27, that one deals with the antichrist. Now these years are based on the Babylonian calendar, which is 360 days in a year. Using our Julian calendar, 365.25/yr, that equals 476 years (also note that 1BC to 1 AD is one year, not 2).

Artaxerxes / March 14, 445 B.C

This decree was the fourth of four decrees made by Persian rulers in reference to the Jews. The first was Cyrus' decree in 538 B.C. (2 Chron 36:22—23, Ezra 1:1—4, 5:13). The second was the decree of Darius 1 (522—486) in 520 B.C. (Ezra 6:1,6—12). This decree actually was a confirmation of the first decree. The third was a decree of Artaxerxes Longimanus (464-424) in 458 B.C. (Ezra 7:11—26). The first two decrees pertain to the rebuilding of the temple in Jerusalem and the third relates to the finances for animal sacrifices at the temple. These say nothing about the rebuilding of the city itself. Since an unwallled city was no threat to a military power, a religious temple could be rebuilt without jeopardizing the military authority of those granting permission to rebuild it."

"The fourth decree was also by Artaxerxes Longimanus, issued on **March 14, 445 B.C.** (Neh 2:1-8). On that occasion Artaxerxes granted the Jews permission to rebuild Jerusalem's city walls. This decree is the one referred to in Daniel 9:25."

"So Secular history tells us the order was given on 14 March 445 BC in our calendar we use today. So the countdown began, and 483 Babylonian years / 476 years using our current calendar, from that day the Messiah would come. To the very day Jesus rode into Jerusalem and for the first time in His ministry received and allowed public proclamation that He was the Messiah. That day was the 10th of Nissan in the Jewish calendar (the day the Sacrificial Lamb was to be brought into the home). That day in our calendar was April 6, 32AD:

(John 12:12 NKJV) The next day a great multitude that had come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

(John 12:13 NKJV) took branches of palm trees and went out to meet Him, and cried out: "Hosanna! 'Blessed is He who comes in the name of the LORD! The King of Israel!"

Cutoff / Didn't Overthrow Roman Empire

As we know, just as Daniel prophesied, Jesus was cutoff from the people. The people were looking for a Messiah that was going to free them from the Roman Empire, but Jesus did come for that, he came to redeem man from his sin. The people couldn't understand that, so when Jesus did not overthrow the Roman Empire, they turned on Him, crucified Him, exactly as Daniel said they would. The odds of this are incalculable, but for argument sake lets just say 1 in 100,000.

4.) The Messiah would be killed before the destruction of the temple. Daniel 9:26c / Matthew 27:50-51

(Daniel 9:25 NKJV) "Know therefore and understand, That from the going forth of the command To restore and build Jerusalem Until Messiah the Prince, There shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks; The street shall be built again, and the wall, Even in troublesome times.

*(Daniel 9:26 NKJV) "And after the sixty-two weeks **Messiah shall be cut off, but not for Himself; And the people of the prince who is to come Shall destroy the city and the sanctuary.** The end of it shall be with a flood, And till the end of the war desolations are determined.*

(Daniel 9:27 NKJV) Then he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week; But in the middle of the week He shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, Even until the consummation, which is determined, Is poured out on the desolate."

(Matthew 27:50 NKJV) And Jesus cried out again with a loud voice, and yielded up His spirit.

(Matthew 27:51 NKJV) Then, behold, the veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom; and the earth quaked, and the rocks were split,

33AD – 70AD / Titus / Still No Temple Today

Daniel further predicted that the Messiah would be "cut off," killed, and that this event would take place prior to the destruction of Jerusalem. Jesus was crucified around 33 AD, in 70AD the Roman General Titus and his legion of soldiers came into Jerusalem and totally destroyed the city and the temple. To this day, the temple has yet to be rebuilt. All the fighting going on today in Jerusalem is largely due to the fact that the Jews want to rebuild their temple, but can not because the Muslim holy site, the Dome of the Rock stands in the same area. 2000 years later, still no Temple. The Jewish people missed their Messiah, please don't you. The odds of this are incalculable, but for argument sake lets just say 1 in 100,000.

5.) The Jew's authority to administer capital punishment would be gone when the Messiah arrived.

Genesis 49:10c / John 18:31

*(Genesis 49:10 NKJV) The scepter shall not depart from Judah, **Nor a lawgiver** from between his feet, Until Shiloh comes; And to Him shall be the obedience of the people.*

(John 18:31 NKJV) Then Pilate said to them, "You take Him and judge Him according to your law." Therefore the Jews said to him, "It is not lawful for us to put anyone to death,"

Shiloh / Track the Lineage / Lost in 70AD

Shiloh is another name for the Messiah. The "scepter - tribal staff" means the identity of the 12 tribes of Israel. The Jewish people took great pains to track the lineage of where every person came from. They did so because they knew that the Messiah had to come through the lineage of David. This passage says the Messiah will come before they lose the ability to track the lineage of which tribe the person comes from. In 70AD after the Titus Roman destruction of Jerusalem, the people were dispersed for 2000 years, and ask a Jewish person today, and they can not tell you which tribe they are from. Jesus came in 1BC, before the Scepter departed. If someone came today and said they are the Messiah, the Jewish people would have no proof of his lineage.

Lawgiver / Capital Punishment / 30AD

But also it speaks of a lawgiver. This speaks of the ability for the Jewish people to perform Capital Punishment upon anybody who breaks the Law of Moses, the 10 commandments. The Jewish writings (the Talmud) says that it was 40 years before the Destruction of the temple that the Roman Empire ceased allowing them to carry out capital punishment upon a person. 70AD minus 40 equal 30AD. Jesus came in 1BC/AD. He came 30 years before they lost this right. The Jewish people missed their Messiah, all the signs were given them, yet they still missed Him. They didn't study their own Scriptures which they were so diligent to preserve. The same can be true for us, thus Peter is writing us this epistle in way of a Reminder. The odds of this are incalculable, but for argument sake lets just say 1 in 100,000.

His Death

6.) The Messiah would be sacrificed on the same mountain where God tested Abraham. Genesis 22:14 /

Luke 23:33

(Genesis 22:2 NKJV) Then He said, "Take now your son, your only son Isaac, whom you love, and go to **the land of Moriah**, and offer him there as a burnt offering on one of the mountains of which I shall tell you.".....
(Genesis 22:14 NKJV) And Abraham called the name of the place, The-LORD-Will-Provide; as it is said to this day, "In the Mount of The LORD it shall be provided."

(Luke 23:33 NKJV) And when they had come **to the place** called Calvary, there they crucified Him, and the criminals, one on the right hand and the other on the left.

*** For a detailed explanation on this please see the study notes from our Genesis 22 study.

Provide Himself / Old KJV / Lamb Not a Ram / Prophetic

Genesis 22, Abraham is taking his son Isaac up to Mount Moriah to offer him to the Lord. But God had no intentions on having him go through with it, rather it was a picture of what God would do 2000 years later, in Jesus Christ being sacrificed as the Lamb of God, for the sins of the world, at that exact same spot:

(Genesis 22:7 NKJV) But Isaac spoke to Abraham his father and said, "My father!" And he said, "Here I am, my son." Then he said, "Look, the fire and the wood, but where is the lamb for a burnt offering?"

(Genesis 22:8 NKJV) And Abraham said, "My son, God will provide for Himself the lamb for a burnt offering." So the two of them went together.

Not that God will provide for Himself, as you read in the New King James translation, (a poor translation) but God will provide Himself:

(Genesis 22:8 KJV) And Abraham said, My son, God will **provide himself a lamb** for a burnt offering: so they went both of them together.

Here is a very important point to catch, in verse 13 it will be a ram caught in the thicket, not a lamb. It is a huge difference to the story. They are two different words in the Hebrew. (The word for Lamb here is the same one used in Exodus 12:3-5 for the Passover Lamb, and the same word used for Lamb in Isaiah 53:7). This is a prophecy of Abraham concerning Jesus Christ, God the Son, who was provided as a lamb slain for our sins, the substitute for our sins:

The Temple Mount / 2 Chron 3

This is another marvelous prophecy by Abraham. The mount of the LORD is Mount Moriah and today is known as the Temple Mount. In II Chronicles we read:

(2 Chronicles 3:1 NKJV) Now Solomon began to build the house of the LORD at Jerusalem on Mount Moriah, where the Lord had appeared to his father David, at the place that David had prepared on the threshing floor of Ornan the Jebusite.

NT / Calvary

In the New Testament we read of "to that place":

(Luke 23:33 NKJV) And when they had come **to the place** called Calvary, there they crucified Him, and the criminals, one on the right hand and the other on the left.

Exact same Place

In the same place where Abraham built his altar, God would sacrifice His Son and the prophecy of Abraham was fulfilled when he said, "God will provide Himself a sacrifice." In the mount of the LORD it shall be seen and it was, two thousand years later. The picture of Abraham sacrificing his son is a foreshadowing of that which God would do for love of the world in sacrificing His only begotten Son.

The odds of this are incalculable, but for argument sake lets just say 1 in 100,000.

7.) The Messiah's back would be whipped. Isaiah 53:5c Matthew 27:26

(Isaiah 53:5 NKJV) But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; The chastisement for our peace was upon Him, And by His stripes we are healed.

(Matthew 27:26 NKJV) Then he released Barabbas to them; and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered Him to be crucified.

Beaten before the Kill

Not only is the exact spot of His death written 2000 years before his death, but even the details of His whipping and scourging. The odds of this are incalculable, but for argument sake lets just say 1 in 100,000.

8.) The Messiah's hands and feet would be pierced. Psalm 22:16c Matthew 27:38

(Psalms 22:16 NKJV) For dogs have surrounded Me; The congregation of the wicked has enclosed Me. They pierced My hands and My feet;

(Matthew 27:38 NKJV) Then two robbers were crucified with Him, one on the right and another on the left.

400 Years Before Crucifixion Invented

Some 400 years before crucifixion was invented, both Israel's King David and the prophet Zechariah described the Messiah's death in words that perfectly depict that mode of execution. Further, they said that the body would be pierced and that none of the bones would be broken, contrary to customary procedure in cases of crucifixion (Psalm 22 and 34:20; Zechariah 12:10). Again, historians and New Testament writers confirm the fulfillment: Jesus of Nazareth died on a Roman cross, and his extraordinarily quick death eliminated the need for the usual breaking of bones. A spear was thrust into his side to verify that he was indeed, dead.

Hyper-Sled / I-95 / Rest Stop

Imagine today if before a child was born that we would say he will die in a car wreck, or even better, a hyper-sled (which hasn't been invented yet). But not only that we would say he will die in a hyper-sled, on I-95 exit 20 in Jacksonville Florida. And before he dies in the car accident, he will be jumped at a rest stop and beaten senseless. The odds of this are incalculable, but for argument sake lets just say 1 in 100,000.

Top 8

His Birth & Lineage

- 1.) The Messiah would be born in Bethlehem. Micah 5:2a / Matthew 2:1-2
- 2.) The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Isaiah 9:7 / Matthew 1:1

His Environment & the World Setting

- 3.) The Messiah would be announced to his people 483 years, to the exact day, after the decree to rebuild the city of Jerusalem. Daniel 9:25 / John 12:12-13
- 4.) The Messiah would be killed before the destruction of the temple. Daniel 9:26c / Matthew 27:50-51
- 5.) The Jew's authority to administer capital punishment would be gone when the Messiah arrived. Genesis 49:10c / John 18:31

His Death

- 6.) The Messiah would be sacrificed on the same mountain where God tested Abraham. Genesis 22:14 / Luke 23:33
- 7.) The Messiah's back would be whipped. Isaiah 53:5c Matthew 27:26
- 8.) The Messiah's hands and feet would be pierced. Psalm 22:16c Matthew 27:38

The Law of Compound Probability / The Quarter

The following probabilities (The Law of Compound Probability) are taken from Peter Stoner in Science Speaks (Moody Press, 1963) to show that coincidence is ruled out by the science of probability. Stoner says that by using the modern science of probability in reference to eight prophecies, 'we find that the chance that any man might have lived down to the present time and fulfilled all eight prophecies is 1 in 10 to the 17th.' That would be 1 in 100,000,000,000,000,000. In order to help us comprehend this staggering probability, Stoner illustrates it by supposing that "we take 10 to the 17th silver dollars and lay them on the face of Texas. They will cover all of the state two feet deep.

"Now mark one of these silver dollars and stir the whole mass thoroughly, all over the state. Blindfold a man and tell him that he can travel as far as he wishes, but he must pick up one silver dollar and say that this is the right one. What chance would he have of getting the right one? Just the same chance that the prophets would have had of writing these eight prophecies and having them all come true in any one man."

God Reveals Beforehand

God reveals before hand what He will perform:

(Amos 3:7 NKJV) Surely the Lord GOD does nothing, Unless He reveals His secret to His servants the prophets.

Man – Lamb - Worm

What was he doing? God became a man, the man became the Lamb, and then "catch this" the Lamb became the worm. Psalm 22 the great Messianic Prophecy concerning Jesus:

(Psalms 22:6 NKJV) But I am a worm, and no man; A reproach of men, and despised by the people.

(Psalms 22:7 NKJV) All those who see Me ridicule Me; They shoot out the lip, they shake the head, saying,

(Psalms 22:8 NKJV) "He trusted in the LORD, let Him rescue Him; Let Him deliver Him, since He delights in Him!".....

(Psalms 22:14 NKJV) I am poured out like water, And all My bones are out of joint; My heart is like wax; It has melted within Me.

(Psalms 22:15 NKJV) My strength is dried up like a potsherd, And My tongue clings to My jaws; You have brought Me to the dust of death.

(Psalms 22:16 NKJV) For dogs have surrounded Me; The congregation of the wicked has enclosed Me. They pierced My hands and My feet;

(Psalms 22:17 NKJV) I can count all My bones. They look and stare at Me.

(Psalms 22:18 NKJV) They divide My garments among them, And for My clothing they cast lots.

Tolaf / Scarlet / Red Spot / Reproduction

I've become a worm, the word there is "tolaf". Back in the days of Jesus if you wanted to make a scarlet garment, you would get these worms and grind them up into a solution, and then dip the garment in the solution and it would become red/scarlet. These worms, these Tolafs, when they would reproduce they would climb to the limb of a tree, then during reproduction it would die. As it dies it would leave a red spot on the tree limb. So it was during reproduction that it would die. Psalm 22, I am a worm, not a man, so that I might die for Ray and the church of Anne Arundel County, and Christians everywhere.

White as Snow

Then according to Zondervan Pictural Enclopedia, after 3-5 days the red spot dries up and turns white and then flakes off and falls to the ground:

(Isaiah 1:18 NKJV) "Come now, and let us reason together," Says the LORD, "Though your sins are like scarlet, They shall be as white as snow; Though they are red like crimson, They shall be as wool.

From King to Worm – For Me

God became a man, the man became the Lamb, the Lamb became the worm. From the King of the Universe, to the worm of the earth. He became like me, so He can take my sin, die in my place, pay my price for offended the Holy God. God provided Himself the Lamb.

(1 Peter 1:11 NKJV) searching what, or what manner of time, the Spirit of Christ who was in them was indicating when He testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glories that would follow.

(1 Peter 1:12 NKJV) To them it was revealed that, not to themselves, but to us they were ministering the things which now have been reported to you through those who have preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven; things which angels desire to look into.

Salvation – God’s Plan from Eternity / OT Prophets Didn’t Understand Suffering - Glory

The amazing thing is that this “salvation” we are awaiting—the return of Christ—was a part of God’s great plan for us from eternity. The Old Testament prophets wrote about this salvation and studied closely what God revealed to them. They saw the sufferings of the Messiah, and also the glory that would follow; but they could not fully understand the connection between the two. In fact, in some of the prophecies, the Messiah’s sufferings and glory are blended in one verse or paragraph.

When Jesus came to earth, the Jewish teachers were awaiting a conquering Messiah who would defeat Israel’s enemies and establish the glorious kingdom promised to David. Even His own disciples were not clear about the need for His death on the cross (Matt. 16:13-28). They were still inquiring about the Jewish kingdom even after His resurrection (Acts 1:1-8). If the disciples were not clear about God’s program, certainly the Old Testament prophets could be excused!

2 Peaks – Mount Moriah – Mount Olivet / Couldn't See the Valley – Church Age

God told the prophets that they were ministering for a future generation. Between the suffering of Messiah and His return in glory comes what we call "the age of the church." The truth about the church was a hidden "mystery" in the Old Testament period (Eph. 3:1-13). The Old Testament believers looked ahead by faith and saw, as it were, two mountain peaks: Mount Calvary, where Messiah suffered and died (Isa. 53), and Mount Olivet, where He will return in glory (Zech. 14:4). They could not see the "valley" in between, the present age of the church.

Even the angels are interested in what God is doing in and through His church! Read 1 Corinthians 4:9 and Ephesians 3:10 for further information on how God is "educating" the angels through the church.

If the Old Testament prophets searched so diligently into the truths of salvation, and yet had so little to go on, how much more ought we to search into this subject, now that we have a complete Word from God! The same Holy Spirit who taught the prophets and, through them, wrote the Word of God, can teach us the truths in it (John 16:12-15).

Furthermore, we can learn these truths from the Old Testament as well as from the New Testament. You can find Christ in every part of the Old Testament Scriptures (Luke 24:25-27). What a delight it is to meet Christ in the Old Testament Law, the types, the Psalms, and the writings of the prophets. In times of trial, you can turn to the Bible, both the Old and New Testaments, and find all that you need for encouragement and enlightenment.

Yes, for Christians, it is glory all the way! When we trusted Christ, we were born for glory. We are being kept for glory. As we obey Him and experience trials, we are being prepared for glory. When we love Him, trust Him, and rejoice in Him, we experience the glory here and now.

I can't See the Kingdom Come /

They saw the glory of the coming King and His Kingdom. But they also saw the First Coming, the suffering Savior. They couldn't understand the period in between. Maybe you are in between, saying I have seen the Savior, but I can't see the Kingdom. His word is sure, His Kingdom will come.

Verse 12 - things which angels desire to look into: Same word used to look into the "empty tomb" that Easter Sunday. The angels are looking down, looking at us. They would give anything to understand the things we do, for you see they do not have the Holy Spirit dwelling within them, but we do, and the Spirit illuminates these things to us.

Peter said I seen Him, but I have something more sure than what I saw, and that is His Word. The written word is surer than any spiritual experience. 300 times in the New Testament we are told Jesus is coming back. 500 passages in this whole Bible speak of His Second Coming. They struggled because many spoke of His suffering Christ, and many spoke of Victorious Christ. They struggled but we get to see the whole picture. We know the certainty of these things.

Prophecy Fulfilled by Jesus the Christ

Genesis

The Messiah would be born of the "seed" of a woman. (Genesis 3:15a / Luke 1:34-35)
The Messiah would defeat Satan. (Genesis 3:15b / 1 John 3:8)
The Messiah would suffer while reconciling men to God. (Genesis 3:15c / 1 Peter 3:18)
The Messiah would be a descendant of Shem. Genesis 9:26 / Luke 3:23-36
The Messiah would be a descendant of Abraham. Genesis 12:3 Matthew 1:1
The Messiah would be a descendant of Isaac. Genesis 17:19 Luke 3:23-34
The Messiah would be a descendant of Abraham. Genesis 18:17-18a Matthew 1:1
The Messiah would come for all nations. Genesis 18:17-18b Acts 3:24-26
The Messiah would be a descendant of Isaac. Genesis 21:12 Luke 3:23-34
The Messiah would be sacrificed upon the same mountain where God tested Abraham. Genesis 22:14 Luke 23:33
The Messiah would be a descendant of Abraham. Genesis 22:18a Galatians 3:16
The Messiah would come for all nations. Genesis 22:18b Galatians 3:14
The Messiah would be a descendant of Isaac. Genesis 26:4 Luke 3:23-34
The Messiah would be a descendant of Jacob. Genesis 28:14a Luke 3:23-34
The Messiah would come for all people. Genesis 28:14b Galatians 3:26-29
The Messiah would be a descendant of Judah. Genesis 49:10a Luke 3:23-33
The Messiah would be a King Genesis 49:10b John 1:49
The Jew's authority to administer capital punishment would be gone when the Messiah arrived. Genesis 49:10c John 18:31

Numbers

The Messiah would be a King. Numbers 24:17 John 19:19

Deuteronomy

The Messiah would be a Prophet. Deuteronomy 18:15-19a John 6:14
The Messiah would speak with words of authority given to Him from God. Deuteronomy 18:15-19b John 12:48-50
Those who refused to listen to the Messiah would be judged. Deuteronomy 18:15-19c John 12:48-50
The Messiah would be worshiped by angels at his birth. Deuteronomy 32:43 Luke 2:13-14

Ruth

The Messiah would be a descendant of Boaz & Ruth. Ruth 4:12-17 Luke 3:23-32

1 Samuel

The Messiah would be exalted by God with power and strength. 1 Samuel 2:10 Matthew 28:18

2 Samuel

The Messiah would be a descendant of David. 2 Samuel 7:12-13 Matthew 1:1
The Messiah would be the Son of God. 2 Samuel 7:13-14 Matthew 3:16-17
The Messiah would be a descendant of David. 2 Samuel 7:16 Matthew 1:1
The Messiah would come for all people. 2 Samuel 22:50 Romans 15:8-9
The Messiah would be the "Rock." 2 Samuel 23:2-4a 1 Corinthians 10:4
The Messiah would be as the "light of the morning." 2 Samuel 23:2-4b Revelation 22:16

1 Chronicles

The Messiah would be a descendant of Judah. 1 Chronicles 5:2 Luke 3:23-33
The Messiah would be a descendant of David. 1 Chronicles 17:11-12a Luke 3:23-31
The Messiah's throne would be everlasting. 1 Chronicles 17:11-12b Luke 1:32-33
The Messiah would be the Son of God. 1 Chronicles 17:13-14 Matthew 3:16-17

Psalms

The Messiah would be rejected by Gentiles. Psalm 2:1 Acts 4:25-28
Political and religious leaders would conspire against the Messiah. Psalm 2:2 Matthew 26:3-4
The Messiah would be a King. Psalm 2:6 John 12:12-13
The Messiah would be the Son of God. Psalm 2:7a Luke 1:31-35
The Messiah would declare that he was the Son of God. Psalm 2:7b John 9:35-37
The Messiah would be resurrected and crowned as King. Psalm 2:7c Acts 13:30-33
The Messiah would ask God for His inheritance. Psalm 2:8a John 17:4-24
The Messiah would receive authority over all. Psalm 2:8b Matthew 28:18
The Messiah would be the Son of God. Psalm 2:12a Matthew 17:5
The Messiah would reject those who did not believe in him. Psalm 2:12b John 3:36
Infants would give praise to the Messiah. Psalm 8:2 Matthew 21:15-16
The Messiah would be given authority over all things. Psalm 8:6 Matthew 28:18
The Messiah would be resurrected. Psalm 16:8-10a Matthew 28:6
The Messiah's body would not be subject to decay. Psalm 16:8-10b Acts 13:35-37
The Messiah would be exalted to the presence of God. Psalm 16:11 Acts 2:25-33
The Messiah would come for all people. Psalm 18:49 Ephesians 3:4-6
The Messiah would cry out to God. Psalm 22:1a Matthew 27:46
The Messiah would be forsaken by God. Psalm 22:1b Mark 15:34
The Messiah, anguished, would pray without ceasing. Psalm 22:2 Matthew 26:38-39
The Messiah would be despised. Psalm 22:6 Luke 23:21-23
The Messiah would be mocked by people shaking their heads. Psalm 22:7 Matthew 27:39
Mockers would say of the Messiah, "he trusted God, let him deliver him." Psalm 22:8 Matthew 27:41-43
The Messiah would be aware of his Father from his youth. Psalm 22:9 Luke 2:40
The Messiah would be called to God's service from the womb. Psalm 22:10 Luke 1:30-33
The Messiah would be abandoned by the disciples. Psalm 22:11 Mark 14:50
The Messiah would be surrounded by evil spirits. Psalm 22:12-13 Colossians 2:15
The Messiah's heart would burst, flowing with blood & water. Psalm 22:14a John 19:34
The Messiah would be crucified. Psalm 22:14b Matthew 27:35
The Messiah would thirst. Psalm 22:15a John 19:28
The Messiah would thirst shortly before his death. Psalm 22:15b John 19:30
The Messiah would be surrounded by Gentiles at his crucifixion. Psalm 22:16a Luke 23:36
The Messiah would be surrounded by Jews at his crucifixion. Psalm 22:16b Matthew 27:41-43
The Messiah's hands and feet would be pierced. Psalm 22:16c Matthew 27:38
None of the Messiah's bones would be broken. Psalm 22:17a John 19:32-33
People would stare at the Messiah during his crucifixion. Psalm 22:17b Luke 23:35
The Messiah's garments would be divided. Psalm 22:18a John 19:23-24
Lots would be cast for the Messiah's clothes. Psalm 22:18b John 19:23-24
The Messiah's atonement would enable believers to be his brethren. Psalm 22:22 Hebrews 2:10-12
None of the Messiah's bones would be broken. Psalm 34:20 John 19:32-33
The Messiah's offering of himself would replace all sacrifices. Psalm 40:6-8a Hebrews 10:10-13
The Messiah would say the scriptures were written of him. Psalm 40:6-8b Luke 24:44
The Messiah would come to do God's will. Psalm 40:7-8 John 5:30
The Messiah would not conceal his mission from the congregation. Psalm 40:9-10 Luke 4:16-21
The Messiah's betrayer would be a friend whom he broke bread with. Psalm 41:9 Mark 14:17-18
The Messiah would speak with a message of grace. Psalm 45:2 Luke 4:22
The Messiah's throne would be everlasting. Psalm 45:6-7a Luke 1:31-33
The Messiah would be God. Psalm 45:6-7b Hebrews 1:8-9
The Messiah would act with righteousness. Psalm 45:6-7c John 5:30
The Messiah would ascend into heaven. Psalm 68:18a Luke 24:51
The Messiah would give gifts to men. Psalm 68:18b Matthew 10:1
The Messiah would be hated by many without cause. Psalm 69:4 Luke 23:13-22
The Messiah would bear reproach, for God's sake. Psalm 69:7 Matthew 26:65-67
The Messiah would be rejected by the Jews. Psalm 69:8a John 1:11
The Messiah's brothers would disbelieve him. Psalm 69:8b John 7:3-5

The Messiah would be angered by disrespect toward the temple. Psalm 69:9a John 2:13-17
The Messiah would bear reproach, for God's sake. Psalm 69:9b Romans 15:3
The Messiah's disciples would fail him in his time of need. Psalm 69:20 Mark 14:33-41
The Messiah would be offered gall and vinegar. Psalm 69:21a Matthew 27:34
The Messiah would thirst. Psalm 69:21b John 19:28
The potters field would be uninhabited. Psalm 69:25 Acts 1:16-20
The Messiah would speak in parables. Psalm 78:2 Matthew 13:34-35
The Messiah would be at the right hand of God. Psalm 80:17 Acts 5:31
The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Psalm 89:3-4 Matthew 1:1
The Messiah would call God his Father. Psalm 89:26 Matthew 11:27
The Messiah would be God's "firstborn." Psalm 89:27 Mark 16:6
The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Psalm 89:29 Matthew 1:1
The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Psalm 89:35-36 Matthew 1:1
The Messiah would be eternal. Psalm 102:25-27a Colossians 1:17
The Messiah would be the creator of all. Psalm 102:25-27b John 1:3
The Messiah would be accused by false witnesses. Psalm 109:2 John 18:29-30
The Messiah would pray for his enemies. Psalm 109:4 Luke 23:34
The Messiah's betrayer would have a short life. Psalm 109:8a Acts 1:16-18
The Messiah's betrayer would be replaced. Psalm 109:8b Acts 1:20-26
The Messiah would be mocked by people shaking their heads. Psalm 109:25 Mark 15:29-30
The Messiah would be Lord. Psalm 110:1a Matthew 22:41-45
The Messiah would be at the right hand of God. Psalm 110:1b Mark 16:19
The Messiah would be a Priest in the order of Melchisedec. Psalm 110:4 Hebrews 6:17-20
The Messiah would be at the right hand of God. Psalm 110:5 1 Peter 3:21-22
The Messiah would be the "stone" rejected by the Jews. Psalm 118:22 Matthew 21:42-43
The Messiah would come in the name of the Lord. Psalm 118:26 Matthew 21:9
The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Psalm 132:11 Matthew 1:1
The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Psalm 132:17 Matthew 1:1

Proverbs

The Messiah would be from everlasting. Proverbs 8:22-23 John 17:5
The Messiah would ascend and descend from heaven. Proverbs 30:4a John 3:13
God would have a Son. Proverbs 30:4b Matthew 3:16-17

Isaiah

The Jews would have a hardened heart against the Messiah. Isaiah 6:9-10a John 12:37-40
The Messiah would speak in parables. Isaiah 6:9-10b Matthew 13:13-15
The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Isaiah 7:13-14 Matthew 1:1
The Messiah would be born of a virgin. Isaiah 7:14a Luke 1:34-35
The Messiah would be Immanuel, "God with us." Isaiah 7:14b Matthew 1:21-23
The Messiah would be God. Isaiah 7:14c John 12:45
The Messiah would be a "stumbling stone" for the Jews. Isaiah 8:14 Matthew 21:43-44
The Messiah would minister in Galilee. Isaiah 9:1-2a Matthew 4:12-17
The Messiah would be a light to the Gentiles. Isaiah 9:1-2b Luke 2:28-32
The birth of the Messiah. Isaiah 9:6a Luke 2:11
The Messiah would be the Son of God. Isaiah 9:6b Luke 1:35
The Messiah would be the "Wonderful Counsellor." Isaiah 9:6c John 7:46
The Messiah would be both God and man (the "Mighty God"). Isaiah 9:6d John 10:30
The Messiah would be from everlasting (the "Everlasting Father"). Isaiah 9:6e Revelation 1:8
The Messiah would be the "Prince of Peace." Isaiah 9:6f Colossians 1:20
The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Isaiah 9:7 Matthew 1:1
The Messiah would be a descendant of Jesse. Isaiah 11:1a Luke 3:23-32
The Messiah would grow up in a poor family. Isaiah 11:1b Luke 2:7
The Messiah would have the full Spirit of God upon him. Isaiah 11:2a Matthew 3:16-17
The Messiah would have the Spirit of Wisdom. Isaiah 11:2b Luke 2:40

The Messiah would have the Spirit of Understanding. Isaiah 11:2c Luke 2:40
The Messiah would have the Spirit of Counsel. Isaiah 11:2d Matthew 7:28-29
The Messiah would have the Spirit of Might. Isaiah 11:2e Matthew 8:27
The Messiah would have the Spirit of the Knowledge of God. Isaiah 11:2f John 7:29
The Messiah would have the Spirit of the Fear of God. Isaiah 11:2g Hebrews 5:7
The Messiah would have a quick understanding in the fear of the Lord. Isaiah 11:3a Luke 2:46-47
The Messiah would not judge on the basis of external representations. Isaiah 11:3b John 7:24
The Messiah would judge the poor with righteousness. Isaiah 11:4 Mark 12:41-44
The Messiah would be a descendant of Jesse. Isaiah 11:10a Luke 3:23-32
The Messiah would come for all people. Isaiah 11:10b Acts 13:47-48
The Messiah would have the key of David. Isaiah 22:22 Revelation 3:7
The Messiah would defeat death. Isaiah 25:8 Revelation 1:18
Others would rise to life at the resurrection of the Messiah. Isaiah 26:19 Matthew 27:52-53
The Messiah would be the cornerstone. Isaiah 28:16 1 Peter 2:4-6
The Messiah would heal the blind. Isaiah 35:5a Mark 10:51-52
The Messiah would heal the deaf. Isaiah 35:5b Mark 7:32-35
The Messiah would heal the lame. Isaiah 35:6a Matthew 12:10-13
The Messiah would heal the dumb. Isaiah 35:6b Matthew 9:32-33
The forerunner of the Messiah would live in the wilderness. Isaiah 40:3a Matthew 3:1-4
The forerunner would prepare people for the coming of the Messiah. Isaiah 40:3b Luke 1:17
The Messiah would be God. Isaiah 40:3c John 10:30
The Messiah would be as a shepherd. Isaiah 40:11 John 10:11
The Messiah would be God's servant. Isaiah 42:1a John 4:34
The Messiah would have the Spirit of God upon him. Isaiah 42:1b Matthew 3:16-17
The Messiah would please God. Isaiah 42:1c Matthew 3:16-17
The Messiah would provide "justice" to the Gentiles. Isaiah 42:1d Matthew 24:14
The Messiah would not draw attention to himself. Isaiah 42:2 Matthew 12:15-21
The Messiah would have compassion for the poor and needy. Isaiah 42:3 Matthew 11:4-5
The Messiah would receive guidance from God. Isaiah 42:6a John 5:19-20
The Messiah would be ministered to by God. Isaiah 42:6b John 8:29
The Messiah would be the new covenant. Isaiah 42:6c Matthew 26:28
The Messiah would be a light to the Gentiles. Isaiah 42:6d John 8:12
The Messiah would heal the blind. Isaiah 42:7 Matthew 9:27-30
The Messiah would be from everlasting. Isaiah 48:16a John 1:1-2
The Messiah would be sent from God. Isaiah 48:16b John 7:29
The Messiah would come for all people. Isaiah 49:1a 1 Timothy 2:4-6
The Messiah would be called to God's service from the womb. Isaiah 49:1b Matthew 1:20-21
The Messiah would be called by his name before he was born. Isaiah 49:1c Luke 1:30-31
The Messiah's words would be as a sharp sword. Isaiah 49:2a Revelation 2:12-16
The Messiah would be protected by God. Isaiah 49:2b Matthew 2:13-15
The Messiah would be responsible for the judgement of mankind. Isaiah 49:2c John 5:22-29
The Messiah would be God's servant. Isaiah 49:3a John 17:4
The Messiah's work would glorify God. Isaiah 49:3b Matthew 15:30-31
The Messiah would be distressed over the Jews' unbelief. Isaiah 49:4a Luke 19:41-42
The Messiah would be rejected by the Jews. Isaiah 49:4b John 5:43
The Messiah would be God's servant. Isaiah 49:5a John 6:38
The Messiah would come to bring Israel back to God. Isaiah 49:5b Matthew 15:24
The Messiah would be God's servant. Isaiah 49:6a John 12:49-50
The Messiah would be a light to the Gentiles. Isaiah 49:6b Acts 13:47-48
The Messiah would be despised. Isaiah 49:7 John 10:20
The Messiah would speak with knowledge given to him from God. Isaiah 50:4 John 12:49
The Messiah would not be rebellious to God's will. Isaiah 50:5 John 12:27
The Messiah's back would be whipped. Isaiah 50:6a Matthew 27:26
The Messiah's face would be beaten and spit upon. Isaiah 50:6b Matthew 26:67
The Messiah would steadfastly set his face toward his mission. Isaiah 50:7 Luke 9:51-53
The Messiah would be justified by his righteousness. Isaiah 50:8 1 Timothy 3:16

The Messiah would place his trust in God. Isaiah 50:8-10 John 11:7-10
The Messiah would be God's servant. Isaiah 52:13a John 9:4
The Messiah would be highly exalted. Isaiah 52:13b Philippians 2:9-11
The Messiah's face would be disfigured from severe beatings. Isaiah 52:14 Matthew 26:67-68
The Messiah's blood would be shed to make atonement for all. Isaiah 52:15 Revelation 1:5
The Messiah's own people would not believe he was the Christ. Isaiah 53:1 John 12:37-38
The Messiah would grow up in a poor family. Isaiah 53:2a Luke 2:7
The Messiah would have the appearance of an ordinary man. Isaiah 53:2b Philippians 2:7-8
The Messiah would be despised. Isaiah 53:3a Luke 4:28-29
The Messiah would be rejected. Isaiah 53:3b Matthew 27:21-23
The Messiah would have great sorrow and grief. Isaiah 53:3c Luke 19:41-42
Men would hide from being associated with the Messiah. Isaiah 53:3d Mark 14:50-52
The Messiah would have a healing ministry. Isaiah 53:4a Luke 6:17-19
The Messiah would bear and carry upon himself the sins of the world. Isaiah 53:4b 1 Peter 2:24
The Messiah would be thought to be cursed by God. Isaiah 53:4c Matthew 27:41-43
The Messiah would bear the penalty for mankind's transgressions. Isaiah 53:5a Luke 23:33
The Messiah's sacrifice would provide peace between man and God. Isaiah 53:5b Colossians 1:20
The Messiah's back would be whipped. Isaiah 53:5c Matthew 27:26
The Messiah would be the sin-bearer for all mankind. Isaiah 53:6a Galatians 1:4
It was God's will that the Messiah would be the sin-bearer for all mankind. Isaiah 53:6b 1 John 4:10
The Messiah would be oppressed and afflicted. Isaiah 53:7a Matthew 27:27-31
The Messiah would be silent before his accusers. Isaiah 53:7b Matthew 27:12-14
The Messiah would be as a sacrificial lamb. Isaiah 53:7c John 1:29
The Messiah would be confined and persecuted. Isaiah 53:8a Matthew 26:47-27:31
The Messiah would be judged. Isaiah 53:8b John 18:13-22
The Messiah would be killed. Isaiah 53:8c Matthew 27:35
The Messiah would die for the sins of the world. Isaiah 53:8d 1 John 2:2
The Messiah would be buried in a rich man's grave. Isaiah 53:9a Matthew 27:57
The Messiah would be innocent and had done no violence. Isaiah 53:9b Mark 15:3
The Messiah would have no deceit in his mouth. Isaiah 53:9c John 18:38
It was God's will that the Messiah would die for all mankind. Isaiah 53:10a John 18:11
The Messiah would be an offering for sin. Isaiah 53:10b Matthew 20:28
The Messiah would be resurrected and live forever. Isaiah 53:10c Mark 16:16
The Messiah would prosper. Isaiah 53:10d John 17:1-5
God would be fully satisfied with the suffering of the Messiah. Isaiah 53:11a John 12:27
The Messiah would be God's servant. Isaiah 53:11b Romans 5:18-19
The Messiah would justify man before God. Isaiah 53:11c Romans 5:8-9
The Messiah would be the sin-bearer for all mankind. Isaiah 53:11d Hebrews 9:28
Because of his sacrifice, the Messiah would be greatly exalted by God. Isaiah 53:12a Matthew 28:18
The Messiah would give up his life to save mankind. Isaiah 53:12b Luke 23:46
The Messiah would be grouped with criminals. Isaiah 53:12c Luke 23:32
The Messiah would be the sin-bearer for all mankind. Isaiah 53:12d 2 Corinthians 5:21
The Messiah would intercede to God in behalf of mankind. Isaiah 53:12e Luke 23:34
The Messiah would be resurrected by God. Isaiah 55:3 Acts 13:34
The Messiah would be a witness. Isaiah 55:4 John 18:37
The Messiah would come to provide salvation. Isaiah 59:15-16a John 6:40
The Messiah would be the intercessor between man and God. Isaiah 59:15-16b Matthew 10:32-33
The Messiah would come to Zion as their Redeemer. Isaiah 59:20 Luke 2:38
The Messiah would have the Spirit of God upon him. Isaiah 61:1-2a Matthew 3:16-17
The Messiah would preach the good news. Isaiah 61:1-2b Luke 4:17-21
The Messiah would provide freedom from the bondage of sin and death. Isaiah 61:1-2c John 8:31-32
The Messiah would proclaim a period of grace. Isaiah 61:1-2d John 5:24

Jeremiah

The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Jeremiah 23:5-6a" Luke 3:23-31
The Messiah would be God. Jeremiah 23:5-6b" John 13:13

The Messiah would be both man and God. Jeremiah 23:5-6c" 1 Timothy 3:16
The Messiah would be born of a virgin. Jeremiah 31:22 Matthew 1:18-20
The Messiah would be the new covenant. Jeremiah 31:31 Matthew 26:28
The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Jeremiah 33:14-15 Luke 3:23-31

Ezekiel

The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Ezekiel 17:22-24 Luke 3:23-31
The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Ezekiel 34:23-24 Matthew 1:1

Daniel

The Messiah would ascend into heaven. Daniel 7:13-14a Acts 1:9-11
The Messiah would be highly exalted. Daniel 7:13-14b Ephesians 1:20-22
The Messiah's dominion would be everlasting. Daniel 7:13-14c Luke 1:31-33
The Messiah would come to make an end to sins. Daniel 9:24a Galatians 1:3-5
The Messiah would be holy. Daniel 9:24b Luke 1:35
The Messiah would be announced to his people 483 years, to the exact day, after the decree to rebuild the city of Jerusalem. Daniel 9:25 John 12:12-13
The Messiah would be killed. Daniel 9:26a Matthew 27:35
The Messiah would die for the sins of the world. Daniel 9:26b Hebrews 2:9
The Messiah would be killed before the destruction of the temple. Daniel 9:26c Matthew 27:50-51
A vision of the Messiah in a glorified state. Daniel 10:5-6 Revelation 1:13-16

Hosea

The Messiah would defeat death. Hosea 13:14 1 Corinthians 15:55-57

Joel

The Messiah would offer salvation to all mankind. Joel 2:32 Romans 10:12-13

Micah

The Messiah would be born in Bethlehem. Micah 5:2a Matthew 2:1-2
The Messiah would be God's servant. Micah 5:2b John 15:10
The Messiah would be from everlasting. Micah 5:2c Revelation 1:8

Haggai

The Messiah would visit the second Temple. Haggai 2:6-9 Luke 2:27-32
The Messiah would be a descendant of Zerubbabel. Haggai 2:23 Luke 3:23-27

Zechariah

The Messiah would be God's servant. Zechariah 3:8 John 17:4
The Messiah would be Priest and King. Zechariah 6:12-13 Hebrews 8:1
The Messiah would be greeted with rejoicing in Jerusalem. Zechariah 9:9a Matthew 21:8-10
The Messiah would be beheld as King. Zechariah 9:9b John 12:12-13
The Messiah would be just. Zechariah 9:9c John 5:30
The Messiah would bring salvation. Zechariah 9:9d Luke 19:10
The Messiah would be humble. Zechariah 9:9e Matthew 11:29
The Messiah would be presented to Jerusalem riding on a donkey. Zechariah 9:9f Matthew 21:6-9
The Messiah would be the cornerstone. Zechariah 10:4 Ephesians 2:20
At the time of Messiah's coming, Israel would have unfit leaders. Zechariah 11:4-6a Matthew 23:1-4
The Messiah's rejection would cause God to remove His protection of Israel. Zechariah 11:4-6b Luke 19:41-44
The Messiah would be rejected in favor of another king. Zechariah 11:4-6c John 19:13-15
The Messiah would have a ministry to the "poor," the believing remnant. Zechariah 11:7 Matthew 9:35-36
The unbelief of Israel's leaders would force the Messiah to reject them. Zechariah 11:8a Matthew 23:33
The Messiah would be despised. Zechariah 11:8b Matthew 27:20

The Messiah would stop ministering to the those who rejected Him. Zechariah 11:9 Matthew 13:10-11
The Messiah's rejection would cause God to remove His protection of Israel. Zechariah 11:10-11a Luke 19:41-44
The Messiah would be God Zechariah 11:10-11b John 14:7
The Messiah would be betrayed for thirty pieces of silver. Zechariah 11:12-13a Matthew 26:14-15
The Messiah would be rejected. Zechariah 11:12-13b Matthew 26:14-15
Thirty pieces of silver would be thrown into the house of the Lord. Zechariah 11:12-13c Matthew 27:3-5
The Messiah would be God Zechariah 11:12-13d John 12:45
The Messiah's body would be pierced. Zechariah 12:10a John 19:34-37
The Messiah would be both God and man. Zechariah 12:10b John 10:30
The Messiah would be rejected. Zechariah 12:10c John 1:11
It was God's will that the Messiah would die for all mankind. Zechariah 13:7a John 18:11
The Messiah would die a violent death. Zechariah 13:7b Matthew 27:35
The Messiah would be both God and man Zechariah 13:7c John 14:9
Israel would be scattered as a result of rejecting the Messiah Zechariah 13:7d Matthew 26:31-56

Malachi

A messenger would prepare the way for the Messiah. Malachi 3:1a Matthew 11:10
The Messiah would make a sudden appearance at the temple. Malachi 3:1b Mark 11:15-16
The Messiah would be the messenger of the new covenant. Malachi 3:1c Luke 4:43
The Messiah's forerunner would come in the spirit of Elijah. Malachi 4:5 Matthew 3:1-2
The Messiah's forerunner would turn many to righteousness. Malachi 4:6 Luke 1:16-17

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, "*feeding His sheep*".

The Dispersed

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unties these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- Strengthen – to make one strong;
- Settle – to lay a foundation.

Back to the Basics

Peter here in these next few verses is giving a Christianity 101 class. I think it is important to go back to the basics, to refresh ourselves in them. Especially for those that have been saved for some time. It is easy for the basics to be blurred out by the business of life. For new-believers it is important to establish that firm foundation from which to build on our spiritual maturity. Peter reminds us of the calling that comes with our salvation, the basic application and understanding

Outline: The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

- Remember the Hope (1:13 - 16)
- Remember the Cross (1:17 - 21)
- Remember the Power of the Word (1:22 -2:3)

Remember the Hope (1:13 - 16)

(1 Peter 1:13 NKJV) Therefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and rest your hope fully upon the grace that is to be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ;

(1 Peter 1:14 NKJV) as obedient children, not conforming yourselves to the former lusts, as in your ignorance;

(1 Peter 1:15 NKJV) but as He who called you is holy, you also be holy in all your conduct,

(1 Peter 1:16 NKJV) because it is written, "Be holy, for I am holy."

Prophets Wished / Big Picture – Hard Life

As we have said in the past studies, the prophets would have given anything to know the things we know, they would envy us, because we know the whole story. We have the last page of this great story. The Suffering Messiah would take on humanity, die for the sins of man, but rise again on the third day. And soon, He will be coming back for His church, and to set up the Millennial Kingdom. We see the whole picture, and that should affect the way we live every day. No matter how hard life gets, remember the Big Picture.

Gird Up / Move Quickly / Change Way World Thinks – to Way God Thinks

Verse 13 - Therefore gird up the loins of your mind: Gird up he says. Guys in the Bible days wore long robes, so if you wanted to move quickly, freely, say to run or get some heavy work done, the men would gird up their robe. They would pull it up and fold it over their waist belt. Peter is saying for us not to go around with long robes, with things that can trip us up, slow us down; in reference to our minds. The calling of our salvation is to change our mind from how the world thinks, to how children of God are to think.

Change Mind – Change Heart

We have said this before (check out our study in Philippians'), God can not change your heart, until you change your mind. God will not violate your free-will, He will not force Himself or His ways upon. It is not until you come into agreement with Him, that His way is the best, that He can work that into your heart and make that a part of your very being.

Change Mind / Hard Times – Don't Go Back / Not Issue of Happiness but Righteousness

What are we to be changing our mind about, what are these people to be changing their mind about? In the context of this epistle, these people are going through some real tough times, and tougher times are to come that they don't even fully know about yet. Peter is saying stay obedient, stay focused, don't go back to the ways before you got saved. When hard times come people may say this isn't my idea of a great Christian life. I want love, joy, peace, and happiness, and all I am getting is trials and tribulations. As we studied before, salvation, this Christian life, is not an issue of happiness, but righteousness. Right standing before the Holy and Pure God. We, Christians, need to change their mind on the definition of salvation, and see clearly God's definition of salvation.

Rest on Grace / Def of Grace / Looking at Self

Verse 13 - and rest your hope fully upon the grace that is to be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ: We are told to rest our hope upon His grace. Salvation is GRACE, G-R-A-C-E - God's Riches, at Christ's Expense. The doctrinal definition is: Unmerited Favor Upon the Infinitely Ill Deserving. Grace is getting what we don't deserve. We got life, and Jesus got death, that is grace. Now if we make salvation about happiness, remember we are being told change our minds, the way we think, so if we make salvation about personal happiness, then we will constantly be unhappy, because we will constantly be looking at ourselves. We will constantly be looking at what we have or don't have, what we want and what we don't want, and that will distract us from looking at Him, and we are told here in verse 13 that we are to rest and hope on one thing, the grace that He gives. He forgives us, if that doesn't make you happy, then nothing on this earth will.

Make Self Miserable / JOY

Do you want to make yourself miserable, think about yourself, dwell on yourself and you will be depressed in no time. You will be depressed by what you are, or are not, what you have, or don't have. Listen to me Christian, the key to true JOY in life is this simple formula. J-O-Y, Jesus first, Others second, and Yourself last. What happens is you take your eyes off yourself, and focus them on Jesus.

Not Your Own

Christian remember this, You are not your own, and that is the greatest news I can tell someone. The worse news I can tell someone is that you are your own. If you are not your own, but His, then you are His responsibility, and he will never fail. If you are your own, then it is all up to you, and you have nothing to rest upon except yourself.

(1 Corinthians 6:19 NKJV) Or do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and you are not your own?

Careful – Vulnerable / Intoxicated – Quick Fixes

Verse 14 - as obedient children, not conforming yourselves to the former lusts, as in your ignorance; Again, be careful of the vulnerability during hard times of going back to what the world has to offer you. Hey lets have a night out on the times, or cruise the net and hit some chat rooms, pop a video in. We are to be sober, do not become intoxicated by the quick fixes of the world, they will eventually leave you hung over. Peter writes to remind us of Our Great Salvation, and to hang on to it, no matter how hard times get.

Be Holy

Verse 16 - because it is written, "Be holy, for I am holy." I literally write this verse down every morning in my prayer journal. It is God's calling that comes with our Salvation - His Standard. Ray, today, be holy, set apart, walk in integrity, be ye blameless. What will I do with my eyes today - be ye holy. What will I do with my tongue today - be ye holy. Where will I allow my mind to go today - be ye holy.

Why are we to be holy, because we were redeemed by the precious blood of Jesus Christ.

Remember the Cross (1:17 - 21)

(1 Peter 1:17 NKJV) And if you call on the Father, who without partiality judges according to each one's work, conduct yourselves throughout the time of your stay here in fear;

(1 Peter 1:18 NKJV) knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers,

(1 Peter 1:19 NKJV) but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.

(1 Peter 1:20 NKJV) He indeed was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you

(1 Peter 1:21 NKJV) who through Him believe in God, who raised Him from the dead and gave Him glory, so that your faith and hope are in God.

Purchased Back / Bringing Us Back to Cross / Passion of Christ

Redeemed, means to purchase back. We were bought out of our sin and death to come by the blood of Jesus Christ. Peter is bringing us back to the cross. The cross is a most sobering place, and we need to come back often. If you ever feel that your sin isn't that big of a deal, then you need to go back to the cross. I challenge you read the account of the crucifixion regularly, I suggest to you to watch the "Passion of Christ" regularly, let these things recalibrate your compass. Billy Graham said he will never be able to preach on the cross without the images of that movie flooding back to his mind. We are to Fear sin because look at the consequences of sin:

7 Places

The cross, 6 hours that one Friday on a hill in Palestine, the King of the Universe bled for you, and He bled for me. Jesus bled His precious blood from 7 places that Day as we learn from the Scriptures.

- He bled from His face (as they buffeted Him),
- He bled from His beard (as they plucked His beard – Isaiah 50:6),
- He bled from His back as the whip embedded with bits of broken bone and pottery shredded
- He bled from His forehead bled as they pressed the crown of one-and-a-half inch thorns upon His head, He bled from
- He bled from His hands, as they drove the nails into His body
- He bled from His feet, as they drove the nails into His body,
- He bled from His side as they would thrust that spear into Him.

Consider that next time you think it isn't that big of a deal, everybody does it. Fear sin because look at the consequences of sin.

7 Significance

But let me share another fear we should have, sin leaves you unprotected, leaves you open to be crushed. Those 7 places Jesus bled look at the significance of them in our lives.

- Our face (the bag over our head), sin blinds of us, fools us, we can't see the damage that is coming.
- Our forehead, sin attacks our minds, makes us make foolish mistakes.
- Our back, sin leaves us defenseless, it leaves us open to be blindsided.
- Our feet, sin takes us to places we should not be.
- Our hands, sin has us do things we should not do.
- Our side, sin causes things to come out of us that we will regret for life.
- The Beard, our sin, effects the way people look at me.

Verse 17 - And if you call on the Father: If you call on the Father, God says I protect you from death, and I protect you in life. Peter says remember the cross.

Remember the Power of the Word (1:22 -2:3)

(1 Peter 1:22 NKJV) Since you have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit in sincere love of the brethren, love one another fervently with a pure heart,

We will cover this when we reach the Duty section of this epistle.

(1 Peter 1:23 NKJV) having been born again, not of corruptible seed but incorruptible, through the word of God which lives and abides forever,

(1 Peter 1:24 NKJV) because "All flesh is as grass, And all the glory of man as the flower of the grass. The grass withers, And its flower falls away,

(1 Peter 1:25 NKJV) But the word of the LORD endures forever." Now this is the word which by the gospel was preached to you.

(1 Peter 2:1 NKJV) Therefore, laying aside all malice, all deceit, hypocrisy, envy, and all evil speaking,

(1 Peter 2:2 NKJV) as newborn babes, desire the pure milk of the word, that you may grow thereby,

(1 Peter 2:3 NKJV) if indeed you have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

Born Again / Stirred & Penetrated

Verse 23 - born again: All who have repented and asked Jesus for forgiveness of their sin have been born again. Not by human conception, but being conceived by the word of God. Every believer is born again by the same way, the word of God was spoken to them, and it stirred our hearts, penetrated our hearts, and we were conceived and born again.

Explosive Word

This Word, this explosive word of God:

(Hebrews 4:12 NKJV) For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

Living Word – 66 Books / Man’s Word / Bargain Table

This living word, 1 Bible, 66 Books, 1118 chapters, and 31102 verses, and 3,500,034 words, are living and powerful, are inspired. Man will write many books, man’s ideas and philosophies spring up and fade away, but verse 25 the Word of God endures forever. Books that are on today’s best seller list for 39.99 will next year be on the bargain closeout table for 1.99. But the word of God endures forever.

(Ecclesiastes 12:12 NKJV) And further, my son, be admonished by these. Of making many books there is no end, and much study is wearisome to the flesh.

Living Word Must be Embraced / Inspired; Poetically – Theologically - Physically

“Man shall not live by bread alone,” Jesus declared,” but by every word which proceeds out of the mouth of God” (see Matthew 4:4). Every part of the Word is living. None can be ignored. All must be embraced. Every word is inspired—not just poetically or theologically—but physically. How do I know? Look at our text:

(1 Peter 1:23 NKJV) having been born again, not of corruptible seed but incorruptible, through the word of God which lives and abides forever,

Seed – Sperm / Anything Living can Reproduce

The phrase “incorruptible seed” is a Greek term that speaks of sperm. This should not be surprising, for by definition, any living thing has the capability to reproduce itself. The Word of God is no exception, for by it we are born again:

(John 6:63 NKJV) "It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life.

Nicodemus / Must be Born Again

Let me take you back to a day 2000 years ago, a teacher of Israel comes to Jesus at night, his name was Nicodemus, the first Nick at Night. “Master, we know that You must be from God, for no man can do the works You do unless God be with him,” Nicodemus said to Jesus one night. “Verily, I say unto you, you must be born again,” Jesus said.

Scratching Head / How? / Born of Flesh is Flesh / Born of Spirit is Spirit

Perhaps scratching his head, Nicodemus said, "How can this be? How can a man enter into his mother's womb a second time? What do You mean?" "That which is born of flesh is flesh," Jesus said, "but that which is born of spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I say you must be born again. The wind bloweth where it wants, and you hear the sound, but no man knows from whence it comes and no man knows where it goes" (see John 3:1–10):

(John 3:1 NKJV) There was a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews.

(John 3:2 NKJV) This man came to Jesus by night and said to Him, "Rabbi, we know that You are a teacher come from God; for no one can do these signs that You do unless God is with him."

(John 3:3 NKJV) Jesus answered and said to him, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God."

(John 3:4 NKJV) Nicodemus said to Him, "How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born?"

(John 3:5 NKJV) Jesus answered, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God."

(John 3:6 NKJV) "That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit."

(John 3:7 NKJV) "Do not marvel that I said to you, 'You must be born again.'"

(John 3:8 NKJV) "The wind blows where it wishes, and you hear the sound of it, but cannot tell where it comes from and where it goes. So is everyone who is born of the Spirit."

(John 3:9 NKJV) Nicodemus answered and said to Him, "How can these things be?"

(John 3:10 NKJV) Jesus answered and said to him, "Are you the teacher of Israel, and do not know these things?"

Back to Ezk 37

A teacher of Israel, Nicodemus should have understood the reference. Born again, wind blowing? His mind should have raced immediately to Ezekiel 37, a passage familiar to every rabbi and teacher in Israel. Yes it speaks of the nation Israel, but is a picture of being born again also.

Dead Bones / Preach to Them / Zombies / Prophecy to the Wind - Ruwach

One day, the spirit of the Lord took Ezekiel to a valley full of dry, dead bones and told him to preach to the bones. As Ezekiel began to preach the Word, something amazing began to happen. The bones started to move. Before long, they had joined together like a great army, yet zombielike because they were without life. "Prophecy to the wind," the Lord said to Ezekiel. So Ezekiel prophesied unto the wind even as he had done to the bones, and the wind—the ruwach—the spirit moved into them and the bones came to life.:

(Ezekiel 37:1 NKJV) The hand of the LORD came upon me and brought me out in the Spirit of the LORD, and set me down in the midst of the valley; and it was full of bones.

(Ezekiel 37:2 NKJV) Then He caused me to pass by them all around, and behold, there were very many in the open valley; and indeed they were very dry.

(Ezekiel 37:3 NKJV) And He said to me, "Son of man, can these bones live?" So I answered, "O Lord GOD, You know."

(Ezekiel 37:4 NKJV) Again He said to me, "Prophecy to these bones, and say to them, 'O dry bones, hear the word of the LORD!'"

(Ezekiel 37:5 NKJV) "Thus says the Lord GOD to these bones: 'Surely I will cause breath to enter into you, and you shall live.'

(Ezekiel 37:6 NKJV) "I will put sinews on you and bring flesh upon you, cover you with skin and put breath in you; and you shall live. Then you shall know that I am the LORD.'"

(Ezekiel 37:7 NKJV) So I prophesied as I was commanded; and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and suddenly a rattling; and the bones came together, bone to bone.

(Ezekiel 37:8 NKJV) Indeed, as I looked, the sinews and the flesh came upon them, and the skin covered them over; but there was no breath in them.

(Ezekiel 37:9 NKJV) Also He said to me, "Prophecy to the breath, prophecy, son of man, and say to the breath, 'Thus says the Lord GOD: "Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe on these slain, that they may live.'"

(Ezekiel 37:10 NKJV) So I prophesied as He commanded me, and breath came into them, and they lived, and stood upon their feet, an exceedingly great army.

Born Again – Made Alive by the Spirit – AND THE WORD

If Nicodemus had made the connection between this story and what Jesus was telling him that night, he would have understood that to be born again means to be made alive by the Spirit and the Word, just as the bones became alive when Ezekiel preached the Spirit and the Word.

Same Dynamic Available Today

Perhaps, like me, you have known for years that when the seed of the Word and the Spirit of God penetrate our being, we "dry bones" come to life. I want you to see that the same dynamic that caused us to be born again can continually impact us in any arena where there are dry bones in our lives. I know there is a danger of being saved for awhile and thinking that the word doesn't impact like it did when we first got saved. But Christian, you must hear this today, you must know this today. That same impacting

moment in your life, when the dry bones of your life were given new life through the Spirit (ruach) of God, as the word of God was preached to you, is available for you today. It isn't just the initial experience, that same dynamic can penetrate and impact you over and over again.

Marriage / Parents / Kids / The WORD can Penetrate / Ish 55

"Our marriage is as dry as a bone," you might be saying. Or, "I respect him immensely, but my dad is spiritually as dry as a bone." Or, "My six-grade son is not walking with the Lord as closely as he could be." I have great news for you. The Word of God has the unique ability to impact and change your teenage son or daughter, your grandchildren, your mother, your co-worker, your friend, your husband, your neighbor. How?

(Isaiah 55:10 NKJV) "For as the rain comes down, and the snow from heaven, And do not return there, But water the earth, And make it bring forth and bud, That it may give seed to the sower And bread to the eater,

(Isaiah 55:11 NKJV) So shall My word be that goes forth from My mouth; It shall not return to Me void, But it shall accomplish what I please, And it shall prosper in the thing for which I sent it.

Word Will Accomplish / Here is Your Part

God is saying, "Just as rain coming down causes growth to take place on a barren hillside, so My Word will accomplish the purpose I sent it to do." But here is your part;

(Deuteronomy 6:4 NKJV) "Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God, the LORD is one!

(Deuteronomy 6:5 NKJV) "You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your strength.

(Deuteronomy 6:6 NKJV) "And these words which I command you today shall be in your heart.

(Deuteronomy 6:7 NKJV) "You shall teach them diligently to your children, and shall talk of them when you sit in your house, when you walk by the way, when you lie down, and when you rise up.

Driving In Car / Talk the Scriptures

When you're driving in your car; when you're having breakfast together; when you tuck your kids into bed, don't talk to them about your ideas on dating or your philosophy on politics. Talk to them about Scripture. Share Bible verses with them over and over again.

The Verse is Power – Will Impact / Dry Husband / Unresponsive Wife

You see, the verse itself has power. It is the incorruptible seed that has the power to produce spiritual life: in your husband who seems to be a dry bag of bones; in your wife who seems to be unresponsive to spiritual things. The power is in the Word itself. It is a seed that will not return void but will permanently impact and powerfully affect anyone who hears it.

If We Really Believed This

If we really believed this, folks, we would be sharing Bible verses constantly—as we drive, as we have a meal, as we go on vacation, in the office, on the ball field, in the neighborhood. There would be a steady stream not of our thoughts, but of the living Word of God. Now, we may not see its effect immediately, but, according to Isaiah 55:11, it will take root and blossom ultimately.

Challenge you Today

I challenge you today, Mom, Dad, Friend, Teenager, Grandfather, Neighbor—to take a verse—any verse—and plant it in the ear of your granddaughter. Use it in your conversation as you talk on the phone. Say it in passing to the guy at the gas station. The impact will be huge because God honors His Word even above His name:

(Psalms 138:2 NKJV) I will worship toward Your holy temple, And praise Your name For Your lovingkindness and Your truth; For You have magnified Your word above all Your name.

Recorded in His Book

In Malachi we are told that every time we talk about Him, He records it:

(Malachi 3:16 NKJV) Then those who feared the LORD spoke to one another, And the LORD listened and heard them; So a book of remembrance was written before Him For those who fear the LORD And who meditate on His name.

Lost Appetite

Verse 2:1-3: If the things in verse one are not laid aside, my appetite for the word will diminish. When people start to lose their appetite for the word, it is because sin is in their life. My wife can make me the greatest steak and potato dinner, but if on the way home I stop at the 7/11 and chow a bag of Doritos, I

won't have an appetite for the delicious and nutritious meal my wife has prepared me. When Christians are chewing on junk food, it will diminish their appetite for the delicious and nutritious Word. Lay aside the junk of verse one, then you will desire the milk of the word. We must ask the Lord to search our hearts, show us is there something in my heart that has dulled my appetite for the word.

Conclusion

The Word is Power, Remember it, let it impact your life, let it penetrate you again and again, day after day, like it did the day you first received it.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, "*feeding His sheep*".

The Dispersed

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unties these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- Strengthen – to make one strong;
- Settle – to lay a foundation.

Building a Body / Favorite

In these verses, God is going to talk about His body, for that is what He is doing, He is building Himself a body:

(Ephesians 1:22 NKJV) And He put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be head over all things to the church, (Ephesians 1:23 NKJV) which is His body, the fullness of Him who fills all in all.

He builds His body out of those that have given their life to Him, called Him Lord and Savior. He calls those who have, His favorite, for that is what the word "chosen" means, "favorite and elected".

Outline: The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

- The Feeding of the Body (2:1-3)
- The Fitting of the Body (2:4-8)
- The Favoring of the Body (2:9-10)

The Feeding of the Body (2:1-3)

We are told to desire the pure milk of the word to nourish, feed, and strengthen our spiritual bodies.

Remember no chapter breaks, and we finished chapter one talking of the power of the enduring word of God. How the power of the word can penetrate and impact our lives everyday, just as powerful as it did the first time we received it and became born again.

(1 Peter 2:1 NKJV) Therefore, laying aside all malice, all deceit, hypocrisy, envy, and all evil speaking,

(1 Peter 2:2 NKJV) as newborn babes, desire the pure milk of the word, that you may grow thereby,

(1 Peter 2:3 NKJV) if indeed you have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

Lost Appetite / Junk Food

Sometimes children have no appetite because they have been eating the wrong things. If the things in verse one are not laid aside, my appetite for the word will diminish. When people start to lose their appetite for the word, it is because sin is in their life. My wife can make me the greatest steak and potato dinner, but if on the way home I stop at the 7/11 and chow a bag of Doritos, I won't have an appetite for the delicious and nutritious meal my wife has prepared me. When Christians are chewing on junk food, it will diminish their appetite for the delicious and nutritious Word. Lay aside the junk of verse one, then you will desire the milk of the word. We must ask the Lord to search our hearts, show us is there something in my heart that has dulled my appetite for the word.

Lay Aside / Hinders Appetite

Peter warned his readers to “lay aside” (means to rid yourself) certain wrong attitudes of heart that would hinder their appetite and spiritual growth.

- “**Malice**” - means wickedness in general. Ill willed intentions to others. The dictionary says, “congealed anger”. Congealing is when a liquid turns into a solid. In this case it is anger that hardens over time, it becomes a solid part of us. Anger over time turns into bitterness.
- “**Deciet/Guile**” - is craftiness, using devious words and actions to get what we want.
- “**Hypocrisy**” - of course, if we are guilty of malice and guile, we will try to hide it; and this produces “hypocrisies.”
- “**Envy**” - Often the cause of ill will is envy, which is to be resentful towards others with discontentment.
- “**Evil Speaking**” – gossip, and one result of envy is evil speaking, conversation that tears the other person down. Remember from the mouth flows the condition of the heart.

God You Rid Them / Powered by Intel

So often we want God to rid these things in our life, but here we are told to rid them. You can buy a new computer today and there is a little label on the case that says “powered by Intel”. Well we have a little label on our case and it says, “empowered by the Holy Spirit”. That power is available when we are sick, when we are tired, or when we are sick and tired.

These Cause Loss of Appetite / Stop Feeding – Stop Growing – Stop Enjoying

If these attitudes and actions are in our lives, we will lose our appetite for the pure word of God. If we stop feeding on the Word, we stop growing, and we stop enjoying (“tasting”) the grace that we find in the Lord. When Christians are growing in the Word, they are peacemakers, not troublemakers, and they promote the unity of the church.

New Born Babes Analogy / Natural Part / Are You Hungry – Search Me Lord

It is not that we are new born babes in the Lord, but this is an analogy. As new born babies desire milk, so should we desire the Word. Babies are born hungry, we don't have to teach them to eat, it is a natural part of them. Are you hungry for the word, is it a natural part of you? If not you need to seek the Father and ask Him why. Find out what has got in the way, what junk food are you eating on that has made you lose your appetite.

Loss of appetite doesn't just come from the bad attitude associated in these verses, but it is easy to spend hours in front of the Television, yet say just didn't have time to feed on the word:

The 23^d Channel

The TV is my shepherd
I shall not want
It makes me to lie down on the soft sofa
It leads me away from the faith
It destroys my soul
It leads me in the path of sex and violence for the sponsors' sake
Yea though I walk in the Valley of Christian Responsibility
There will be no interruption,
For the TV is with me
Its cable and remote they comfort me
It prepares a commercial before me
In the presence of my worldliness
It anoints my head with humanism and consumerism
My coveting runneth over
Surely laziness and ignorance shall follow me all the days of my life
And I shall dwell in the house watching TV forever.

The Fitting of the Body (2:4-8)

Let the Word impact you like it first did when you first got saved. God is building Himself a Body, and now we will see he is fitting all of us together to make Himself a body.

(1 Peter 2:4 NKJV) Coming to Him as to a living stone, rejected indeed by men, but chosen by God and precious,

(1 Peter 2:5 NKJV) you also, as living stones, are being built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.

Church is Not a Building / Body is Living Stones / Like Grounds – Fragrance

Peter says not only are we children in the same family (chp 1), but we are stones in the same building. The building isn't the church—the body is! We are the living stones. People like to be on the church grounds, hanging out together. I like to be there, too. Why? It's not because the grounds are anything special. It's because the fragrance of the church is left behind. These buildings are nothing more than buildings. But because the church is here worshiping and praying, studying and fellowshiping with the Lord, the environment is filled with the fragrance of Jesus.

God Building Body / Eph

God is building Himself a body:

(Ephesians 1:22 NKJV) And He put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be head over all things to the church, (Ephesians 1:23 NKJV) which is His body, the fullness of Him who fills all in all.

(Matthew 16:18 NKJV) "And I also say to you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build My church, and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it.

The Spiritual House / 1 Kings 6

Verse 5 - are being built up a spiritual house: That we are living stones who are being built up, or fit together, as a spiritual house brings to mind a most interesting Scripture in 1 Kings 6:7:

(1 Kings 6:7 NKJV) And the temple, when it was being built, was built with stone finished at the quarry, so that no hammer or chisel or any iron tool was heard in the temple while it was being built.

Hammering Done Away from Temple / Then Brought & Fit

When Solomon's temple was being constructed, all of the chiseling, hammering, cutting, and chipping was done underneath the old city of Jerusalem. When the stones were taken to the temple mount, they could be fit together in silence. We're living stones being fit together for an eternal temple in heaven:

(1 Corinthians 6:19 NKJV) Or do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and you are not your own?

Stones Quarried Under the Cross / Each Time Someone Believes

Interestingly the stones for the temple were cut out from Mount Moriah. From Herod's gate to the Damascus gate, right up a hill called Golgotha, the Place of Skulls, what we call Calvary. The Christ was crucified on the top of this Mount, right above where all the stones were cut out to build the Temple. The stones were quarried underneath the place of the cross. Believers are living stones in His building. Each time someone trusts Christ, another stone is quarried out of the pit of sin and cemented by grace into the building. It may look to us that the church on earth is a pile of rubble and ruins, but God sees the total structure as it grows (Eph. 2:19-22).

All The Hammering / This Life the Quarry – Why we are Chipped / Why Next to Him/Her

So, all of the chiseling, hammering, cutting, and chipping was done underneath the old city of Jerusalem. When the stones were taken to the temple mount, they could be fit together in silence. This life is the quarry, which explains why we always feel like we're being chipped and chiseled. "Why am I next to this blockhead?" you ask, or, "Why are they part of the family?"

Why? / Rubbing & Knocking / God Knows who Will Smooth You / Can't Pick Family

You know why? As living stones, we constantly rub against one another, knocking rough edges off one another in the process. You see, God puts us right next to the very people He knows will smooth us down

so He can build us up into a temple for His glory. You know what, we can pick our friends, but we can't pick our family, and we are.

The Problem / Get Away / Fixes to Fix Us / Don't try to Fix the Fix / Embrace It

The problem is, I try to get away from the blockhead I'm rubbing against. But because God puts us in fixes to fix us, He puts us with people and in situations He knows will shape us most effectively. So if I try to fix the fix God put me in, He will be faithful to put me in another fix to fix the fix He wanted to fix in the first place! If we don't learn this, we'll go from fix to fix until finally we say, "Okay, Lord. I'm not going to try to fix this, or wiggle out of that, but I'm going to embrace and accept where You have me because I know You're doing a work on me, shaping me for eternity."

Cod Fish vs. Catfish / Frozen – Soft / Throw Some Catfish In – Across the Country / Sold Premium

Several years ago on the East Coast, cod fisherman began to experience a real demand for their product and they began to ship frozen cod all over the country. They discovered one draw back however; in the freezing process, the cod lost their flavor. To remedy the situation, the fisherman shipped their cod live in salt-water tanks to be processed once they reached their destination. Well the fish got their ok, but because they were sitting in these tanks, they became spongy and soft. For several years the fisherman didn't know what to do. Then someone had a brilliant idea: Ship the fish in the saltwater tank, but throw in some catfish - the natural enemy of the codfish. They tried it. The catfish chased the codfish all around the tank as they traveled across the country, and when they arrived, those that made it alive were flavorful and sold at premium price.

Catfish Necessary Keep Cod Moving / Catfish in Our Life

The catfish were necessary to keep the codfish moving, there-by enhancing their texture and flavor. God says the same to us, since I want the best for you both now and in eternity, I will allow an occasional catfish to come into your tank and chase you around for a little while. Otherwise you will just sit around and get soft.

Great is the Day / You have Linked Me

Great is the day when we see the big picture. You have linked me with them, with her, with him, so you can do your work in me.

(1 Peter 2:5 NKJV) you also, as living stones, are being built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.

(1 Peter 2:6 NKJV) Therefore it is also contained in the Scripture, "Behold, I lay in Zion A chief cornerstone, elect, precious, And he who believes on Him will by no means be put to shame."

(1 Peter 2:7 NKJV) Therefore, to you who believe, He is precious; but to those who are disobedient, "The stone which the builders rejected Has become the chief cornerstone,"

(1 Peter 2:8 NKJV) and "A stone of stumbling And a rock of offense." They stumble, being disobedient to the word, to which they also were appointed.

Tradition of Rejection / Thrown Kidron Valley / Builders Confused – Doesn't Fit Anywhere

According to tradition, during the construction of Solomon's temple, work went smoothly until the builders were unable to locate the cornerstone. Word was sent to send the missing stone up to the temple mount. "We sent that stone a long time ago," the quarriers replied. The builders were confused until one of them remembered a perfectly cut stone that was tossed over the gully into the Kidron Valley because no one knew what to do with it.

Places in Scripture

The rejected cornerstone is a biblical allusion that shows up again and again throughout Scripture: (Isaiah 28:16–18; Psalm 118:22; Acts 4:11).

Application for You

Maybe you say:

- "It was a mistake to marry him," she cries.
- "I can't figure her out," he sighs.

- “This is unworkable. Let’s quit,” they say.

Same for Jesus / How Can He Be? / No Army - Credentials

The same thing happened to Jesus, “How can this carpenter, this peasant, be the Messiah?” they scoffed. “He leads no army. He has no credentials. Let’s get rid of Him,” they said.

Instead of Dump Them / Look At Them – Could this be a Cornerstone / Can’t Figure Out – But Key

Instead of saying, “Dump them,” you and I must be those who look at people and situations and say, “I bet this is the Cornerstone working in my life. Jesus is using this situation in some way I can’t figure out. It doesn’t fit in with my thinking. It doesn’t work according to my calculation or design—but somehow, even as He was rejected, this could very well be a key to what He is doing in my life.”

The Favoring of the Body (2:9-10)

God has a favorite, its true, and it is you.

(1 Peter 2:9 NKJV) But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, His own special people, that you may proclaim the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light;

(1 Peter 2:10 NKJV) who once were not a people but are now the people of God, who had not obtained mercy but now have obtained mercy.

Chosen / Favorite / Dwell on That

Verse 9 - But you are a chosen generation: Chosen - eklektos, ek-lek-tos'; from G1586; select; by implication of **favorite**:--chosen, elect. You are a favorite of God. We all need to know this. You mean God, me, with all my failings and faults, yet you call me your favorite – God says yep, my favorite. Think about that for a moment sometime, I am God’s, the Creator of the Universe, I am His favorite. Amazing, no matter what you are going through or where you have been, he says, “you are my favorite”.

Back to:

(1 Peter 1:2 NKJV) elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, in sanctification of the Spirit, for obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace to you and peace be multiplied.

Priests / Come Into His Presence

a royal priesthood: Not only are we children in the same family and stones in the same building, but we are priests in the same temple. We are a “holy priesthood” and a “royal priesthood” In the Old Testament period, God’s people had a priesthood; but today, God’s people are a priesthood. Each individual believer has the privilege of coming into the presence of God (Heb. 10:19-25). We do not come to God through any person on earth, but only through the one Mediator, Jesus Christ (1 Tim. 2:1-8).

Live as Priests of the Temple

Because He is alive in glory, interceding for us, we can minister as holy priests. This means that our lives should be lived as though we were priests in a temple.

Verse 2:5 / Spiritual Sacrifices

Peter mentioned especially the privilege of offering “spiritual sacrifices.”

(1 Peter 2:5 NKJV) you also, as living stones, are being built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.

We Don’t Bring Animal / Bodies – Lips – Good Works – Money – Soul Winning

Christians today do not bring animal sacrifices as did the Old Testament worshipers; but we do have our own sacrifices to present to God.

- We ought to give “our bodies” to Him as living sacrifices (Rom. 12:1-2):
*(Romans 12:1 NKJV) I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you **present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service.***
(Romans 12:2 NKJV) And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

- As well as the praise of “our lips” (Heb. 13:15)
*(Hebrews 13:15 NKJV) Therefore by Him let us continually offer **the sacrifice of praise** to God, that is, **the fruit of our lips**, giving thanks to His name.*
- The “good works” we do for others (Heb. 13:16).
*(Hebrews 13:16 NKJV) But do not forget to **do good and to share**, for **with such sacrifices** God is well pleased.*
- The money/material things we share with others in God’s service is a spiritual sacrifice (Phil. 4:10-20).
*(Philippians 4:16 NKJV) For even in Thessalonica you sent aid once and again for my necessities.
(Philippians 4:17 NKJV) Not that I seek the gift, but I seek the fruit that abounds to your account.
(Philippians 4:18 NKJV) Indeed I have all and abound. I am full, having received from Epaphroditus **the things sent from you**, a sweet-smelling aroma, **an acceptable sacrifice**, well pleasing to God.*
- Even the “people we win to Christ” are sacrifices for His glory (Rom. 15:16).
*(Romans 15:16 NKJV) that I might be a minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, **ministering the gospel of God**, that the **offering** of the Gentiles might be acceptable, sanctified by the Holy Spirit.*

We offer these sacrifices through Jesus Christ, for only then are they acceptable with God. If we do any of this for our own pleasure or glory, then it will not be accepted as a spiritual sacrifice. Jesus, Our High priest, came to suffer, to be rejected (the stone that was rejected), so that we might have eternal life. Yet for some reason we so often think I came into the world to be happy, and to have things my way.

Holy Nation / Scattered – Disconnected / Pride in Nation / Palm of God’s Hand

Verse 9 - a holy nation: As children of the same family, stones in the same building, priests in the same temple, we are also citizens of the same nation.

Peter wrote this letter to believers living in five different provinces, yet he said that they all belonged to one “spiritual house.” What beautiful words these must have been to people that are scattered abroad. The Jewish people took such pride in their nation, and now they are scattered, but Peter reminds them, God still has you in the palm of His hand, no matter where your mail is being delivered. This is waters of refreshing to these people scattered abroad. God says to you, you may think you are scattered, disconnected from being a nation, but I am making a whole new nation, and you are it. Believers are living stones in His building. Each time someone trusts Christ, another stone is quarried out of the pit of sin and cemented by grace into the building. It may look to us that the church on earth is a pile of rubble and ruins, but God sees the total structure as it grows (Eph. 2:19-22).

The description of the church in these verses here in 2:9-10 parallels God’s description of Israel, in Exodus 19:5-6 and Deuteronomy 7:6. They would put two and two together, and say Lord you are awesome, you bless me Lord, and I am yours forever:

(Exodus 19:5 NKJV) 'Now therefore, if you will indeed obey My voice and keep My covenant, then you shall be a special treasure to Me above all people; for all the earth is Mine.

(Exodus 19:6 NKJV) 'And you shall be to Me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation.' These are the words which you shall speak to the children of Israel."

(Deuteronomy 7:6 NKJV) "For you are a holy people to the LORD your God; the LORD your God has chosen you to be a people for Himself, a special treasure above all the peoples on the face of the earth.

(Deuteronomy 7:7 NKJV) "The LORD did not set His love on you nor choose you because you were more in number than any other people, for you were the least of all peoples;

(Deuteronomy 7:8 NKJV) "but because the LORD loves you, and because He would keep the oath which He swore to your fathers, the LORD has brought you out with a mighty hand, and redeemed you from the house of bondage, from the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt.

We are a chosen generation, which immediately speaks of the grace of God. God did not choose Israel because they were a great people, but because He loved them (Deut. 7:7-8). God has chosen us purely because of His love and grace. “You did not choose Me, but I chose you” (John 15:16, niv).

We are a holy nation. We have been set apart to belong exclusively to God. Our citizenship is in heaven:
(Philippians 3:20 NKJV) For our citizenship is in heaven, from which we also eagerly wait for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ,

We are the people of God. In our unsaved condition, we were not God’s people, because we belonged to Satan and the world (Eph. 2:1-3, 11-19). Now that we have trusted Christ, we are a part of God’s people.

We are a “people of His own special possession,” because He purchased us with the blood of His own Son:

(1 Peter 1:18 NKJV) knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers,

(1 Peter 1:19 NKJV) but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.

Each time someone trusts Christ, another stone is quarried out of the pit of sin and cemented by grace into the building. It may look to us that the church on earth is a pile of rubble and ruins, but God sees the total structure as it grows (Eph. 2:19-22).

Special People / Favorite / Valued Property / A Treasure

Verse 9 - His own special people (a peculiar people KJV), Not weird people, but special. How special to God, He would call you His bride (see Genesis 24 study).

Special - [câgullah /seg-ool-law/] meaning, possession, property. A valued property, peculiar treasure.

Treasure:

(Matthew 13:44 NKJV) "Again, the kingdom of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field, which a man found and hid; and for joy over it he goes and sells all that he has and buys that field.

(Matthew 13:45 NKJV) "Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchant seeking beautiful pearls,

(Matthew 13:46 NKJV) "who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had and bought it.

We are a valued purchased property, and He keeps His eyes upon us, for He favors us, He calls us His favorite:

(Deuteronomy 32:9 KJV) For the LORD'S portion is his people; Jacob is the lot of his inheritance.

(Deuteronomy 32:10 KJV) He found him in a desert land, and in the waste howling wilderness; he led him about, he instructed him, he kept him as the apple of his eye.

that you may proclaim the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light; (1 Peter 2:10 NKJV) who once were not a people but are now the people of God, who had not obtained mercy but now have obtained mercy

Much Is given Much Required / I See the Light

All of these privileges carry with them one big responsibility: revealing the praises of God to a lost world:

(Luke 12:48 NKJV) For everyone to whom much is given, from him much will be required; and to whom much has been committed, of him they will ask the more.

The verb translated “proclaim” means “to tell out, to advertise.” Because the world is “in the dark,” people do not know the “excellencies” of God; but they should see them in our lives. Each citizen of heaven is a living “advertisement” for the virtues of God and the blessings of the Christian life. Our lives should radiate the “marvelous light” into which God has graciously called us. When a rooster crows in the morning, all he is really saying is, I see the light, I see the light.

(1 Peter 2:10 NKJV) who once were not a people but are now the people of God, who had not obtained mercy but now have obtained mercy

After all, we have obtained mercy from God! Were it not for His mercy, we would be lost and on the way to eternal judgment! God reminded Israel many times that He had delivered them from the bondage of Egypt that they might glorify and serve Him, but the nation soon forgot and the people drifted back into their sinful ways. We are God’s chosen people only because of His mercy, and it behooves us to be faithful to Him.

Conclusion

And God calls His own. He calls you today. It doesn’t matter who you are or to which race you belong. Jesus is calling to you to be His own. He wants you to join a chosen generation and a royal priesthood, he is not inviting you to wear robes or recite rituals but to join a priesthood that has access to God. He is asking you to belong to a new nation, not Germany, USA, or England. He asks you to belong to that great company of believers out of every nation. What a wonderful position we have in Christ. Remember the Calling of Our Salvation.

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

The Surrendered Life - The Witness to the World (2:9-12)

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, "feeding His sheep".

The Dispersed

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission of the Flesh - Principles of Fasting (2:11)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, **perfect**, **establish**, **strengthen**, and **settle** you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unties these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- Strengthen – to make one strong;
- Settle – to lay a foundation.

Move to New Section / Bridge / Proclaim the Praises - Lost World

As we move into this new section on duty (Remember Our Example Before Men), we bridge on the closing of the last section in which we were called to God's special people that we proclaim the praises of Him who called us out of darkness into His marvelous light. This calling is to a lost and dying world, and we are given the exhortation to live honorable, uprightly, before them:

(1 Peter 2:9 NKJV) But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, His own special people, that you may proclaim the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light;

(1 Peter 2:10 NKJV) who once were not a people but are now the people of God, who had not obtained mercy but now have obtained mercy.

(1 Peter 2:11 NKJV) Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul,

(1 Peter 2:12 NKJV) having your conduct honorable among the Gentiles, that when they speak against you as evildoers, they may, by your good works which they observe, glorify God in the day of visitation.

World Watching / Everyday Works – Everyday People / God Uses the Common Things

The world is watching, Gentiles there in verse 11 mean non-believers, and they are watching our works, our everyday works. We are everyday people, living out everyday tasks, and that is what the world sees as they look at us. In the context of this section on "Remember Our Example Before Men", the things that are so common are the things that God uses the greatest.

Be Submissive in Common Things / Gov't - Marriage - One Another

As we study through this section the common things are the things that God will ask us to be submissive in, the things He will ask us to surrender our wills to; we will be asked to be submissive to the governing authorities, to our employers and bosses (you students that means your teachers), being submissive to one another in marriage, and to one another which covers every other area of our lives which would include children to parents, people within the church, and all the other areas in our lives.

Common – Gives Life / Nothing Ever Ordinary / Marriage – Kids - Parents – Job / **Called to Them

All these things are everyday life, the common things of life, but it is the common things that God says if you lay them before me, I will give them life. I will take the common and turn them in the extraordinary, because I called you to them, and nothing God ever calls you to is common or ordinary, for He is not common ordinary God. Your marriage is not common, your kids are not common, your parents are not common, your job is not common, your church is not common, your coaching sports is not common, leading a food/clothing drive is not common, nor leading the youth group is not common, for they are all things God has called you to. Nothing, nothing, is just something in your life, or that's just the way it is.

Look, verse 9, is after the call for the submission to governing authorities, within marriages, and to each other:

(1 Peter 3:8 NKJV) Finally, all of you be of one mind, having compassion for one another; love as brothers, be tenderhearted, be courteous;

*(1 Peter 3:9 NKJV) not returning evil for evil or reviling for reviling, but on the contrary blessing, **knowing that you were called to this**, that you may inherit a blessing.*

Used to Bring Us to this Place / But I Know Them

What God is also saying is your government, your boss, that teacher, your kids, your parents, your spouse, are all called by God to bring you to the place you are in your life. God says take these things, and look what I will do with them, both in you and to the lost world, if you will surrender them and yourself to me. You may say, I know these things, all they are, are common, I know them like the back of my hand, there is nothing more here in my family, job, or school than what it is right now. I don't see the commonness of these things making a different.

Really / Moses – Common to Opportunity

Really, let's look at a common life, a story that God set aside, recorded for us, to show us what may appear common to us, is just an opportunity waiting for God to give life to, and change the course of people and a Nation. Let's take a look at Moses:

(Exodus 4:1 NKJV) Then Moses answered and said, "But suppose they will not believe me or listen to my voice; suppose they say, "The LORD has not appeared to you."

(Exodus 4:2 NKJV) So the LORD said to him, "What is that in your hand?" He said, "A rod."

(Exodus 4:3 NKJV) And He said, "Cast it on the ground." So he cast it on the ground, and it became a serpent; and Moses fled from it.

(Exodus 4:4 NKJV) Then the LORD said to Moses, "Reach out your hand and take it by the tail" (and he reached out his hand and caught it, and it became a rod in his hand),

God Slowly Working Moses Along / We Are All Called

God is slowly working Moses along, convincing him of the calling upon his life. That is a slow process in all of our lives, for God has a calling upon all of our life's:

(1 Peter 2:9 NKJV) But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, His own special people, that you may proclaim the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light;

That's all of us, not just ministers of the church. We are all ministers:

(2 Corinthians 3:5 NKJV) Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think of anything as being from ourselves, but our sufficiency is from God,

(2 Corinthians 3:6 NKJV) who also made us sufficient as ministers of the new covenant, not of the letter but of the Spirit; for the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life.

It is considered reasonable service, expected of us.

(Romans 12:1 NKJV) I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service

It is the High Calling:

(2 Timothy 1:8 NKJV) Therefore do not be ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me His prisoner, but share with me in the sufferings for the gospel according to the power of God,

(2 Timothy 1:9 NKJV) who has saved us and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and grace which was given to us in Christ Jesus before time began,

High Calling / High Price

All of us are called to give our life to Christ, for He has given His life for us, and we are to give our lives back to Him and His purposes. Remember you are not your own, for you have been bought with a price. This is a High and Holy calling that is upon each and every one of our lives.

(1 Peter 1:18 NKJV) knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers,

(1 Peter 1:19 NKJV) but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.

(1 Corinthians 6:19 NKJV) Or do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and you are not your own?

Desperate Times / 16K – 3X

We are not that different from Moses, and his day. Moses was living at a time when the people of Israel were living in desperate times, under the slavery of Egypt, living in fear that at any given moment their life could be taken. Women could be taken out of the home and forced into a harem, and then kicked back out on the streets. We today don't live in much of a different time. More people were killed on the streets of America in the past year (16,000 FBI Stat) than in the war in Iraq, did you know that there are 3 times more adult book/videos stores in America than there are McDonald's. 34 million children killed in their mother's womb in the last 20 years (Like in Moses day when they were throwing babies into the Nile River).

Moses I'm Going to Use You / But – But / Suppose - Consider

The Lord says Moses I am going to use you to reach the people I want to reach, and Moses says "but" they won't listen to me. Don't we say that? But Lord, what about this, what about that? But, But!!!
(Exodus 4:1 NKJV) *Then Moses answered and said, "But suppose they will not believe me or listen to my voice; suppose they say, 'The LORD has not appeared to you.'"*

What's In Your Hand

But watch what the Lord shows Moses, as He wants to show us also. The Lord says to Moses, what is that in your hand, and he said it is a rod.
(Exodus 4:2 NKJV) *So the LORD said to him, "What is that in your hand?" He said, "A rod."*

Daily Reminder / Failure in Egypt / Life of Mediocrity

On some days, maybe even daily, I am sure that rod was a reminder of His failure in Egypt. A constant reminder of a life of mediocrity, a constant reminder of trying to do something in his own strength instead of God's. A reminder that he will live out the rest of his days without nobody knowing his name or who he is, and no having any impact on the things of God.

Thought I Would Deliver Israel / Instead Leading Sheep – Holding Rod

I thought I would deliver Israel from Egypt, I was second in the whole land of Egypt, next to be Pharaoh, I had the political power, the military power, the training at the finest schools, I thought it was all God's plan, yet I failed, and I sit out here in this desert now only leading sheep, holding this rod in my hand.

I Know this Staff / 40 years / Knot – Smooth – Shine – Thumb / ***Do We Really Know**

I know this staff ohh so well after all these years of herding sheep. I have carried it for 40 years, I know every knot in it, where the grain curls, it is smoothed on the top from my hand wearing it, it is shiny from the oils of my hand. I like to place my thumb and first finger between the knot in the wood, I know this rod so, so well. But Moses really didn't know it as well as he thought. And I would say that is the same in our lives. God would challenge us and say what is that in your hand. We are surrounded by some many things in our lives and we think we know them ohh so well, but in essence we really don't. Our families, our jobs, our school, our activities.

Surrounded by 2 Questions / Who am I

God asking Moses what's in your hand, is surrounded by two other questions Moses asked back in verse 11 of chapter 3. Moses asks the Lord who am I that I should go?,
(Exodus 3:11 NKJV) *But Moses said to God, "Who am I that I should go to Pharaoh, and that I should bring the children of Israel out of Egypt?"*

Doesn't Matter

Here is a key, God says it doesn't matter who you are, for I am with you.
(Exodus 3:12 NKJV) *So He said, "I will certainly be with you. And this shall be a sign to you that I have sent you: When you have brought the people out of Egypt, you shall serve God on this mountain."*

Who Are You

And then Moses asks, who should I say sent me, I don't even know your name.
(Exodus 3:13 NKJV) *Then Moses said to God, "Indeed, when I come to the children of Israel and say to them, 'The God of your fathers has sent me to you,' and they say to me, 'What is His name?' what shall I say to them?"*

I Am

God says, I Am that I Am.

(Exodus 3:14 NKJV) And God said to Moses, "I AM WHO I AM." And He said, "Thus you shall say to the children of Israel, 'I AM has sent me to you.'"

Becoming One

The meaning of "I Am" is the "Becoming One". God saying I am the God who will become to you all that you will ever need. And the Lord would say that to us today, I am the God that will become to all that you will ever need. When we get to these studies on areas we are asked to submit in, we say "but" I can't it is too hard, and God says I will become to you all that you need to be able to do these things. For:

- Abraham He became **Jehovah Jireh**, the Lord will Provide (Genesis 22), for in Abraham's time of greatest need up there on the Mount when he was to sacrifice Isaac, the Lord provided a substitute.
- For the Nation Israel (Exodus 15) in the wilderness, He said none the diseases that come upon the Egyptians shall come upon you for I Am **Jehovah Rapha**, for I have become your healer.
- Later to Moses in his battle against the Amalikes, against all odds, I am Jehovah Nissi, (Ex 17), I am your banner, your victory.
- He would say to Gideon, when Gideon thought he would die, I am **Jehovah Shalom**, I am your peace.
- He would say to David, I am **Jehovah Ra**, The Lord has become my shepherd, I shall not want, He has made me to lie down in green pastures.
- He would say Gabriel (Luke 1:31), tell Mary I Am **Jehovah Shuwa**, I have become your salvation

I Am Not Restricted / Your Affairs – Nation – Church - You

Moses says who are you, and God says I Am that I Am, I am all that you need. I am not restricted by the state of your affairs, I am not restricted by the state of your nation, I am not restricted by the need of revival in the church. I am not restricted by what you can and can't do, I am not restricted by what is in your hand, or where you are in your life, for I Am the Becoming One

What's In Your Hand / Do You / Light of You – Light of Me

What's in your hand Moses, a rod and I know it well. Do you Moses? Do you really? You think you do, but you have defined it by who you are, not for who I Am. You have not interpreted it in light of me:

Ram's Horn - Jericho

- What's in your hand, the priest says I have a ram's horn; I am a priest of the tribe of Levi. I know it well, I know it's sound; it is part of my daily use. Do you know it well, do you know it interpreted in light of me that when that horn is blown the walls of Jericho will tumble when you blow that thing at my command

Jawbone - Samson

- What's in your hand Samson, a jawbone of an ass, so what? Do you know it interpreted in light of me? Do you know that it will slaughter 1000 Philistines and change the course of a nation?

Clay Picture - Gideon

- What's in your hand Gideon, it is just a clay picture/jar. Do you know it interpreted in light of me? Gideon do you know that there are 135,000 Midianites against 300 of you with only a trumpet and a clay picture? Gideon, cast it down and I will give it life, it will give Israel a mighty victory.

Slingshot - David

- What's in your hand David, a slingshot, I use it drive off jackals from the sheep. Do you know it interpreted in light of me? Lets interpret that little slingshot in the light of the enemies of God are mocking Me, take it and we will kill a giant, and change the course of a nation

3 Loaves

- What's in your hand, 3 loaves and 2 fish, but that is nothing in light of the needs before us. Really, because you have interpreted in light of whom you are. Jesus says give it to me so that the multitude may be feed.

2 Mites

- What's in your hand, 2 mites, that is all I have it isn't worth anything, I'll cast it in the offering when no one is looking. Only God would say this widow has cast in more than all the rest. How she will change the lives of millions who look at the Scriptures on giving

I'm a Mother

- What's in your hand, nothing I am a mom, all that is before me is a continual pile of wash, and the kids in terrible two's. My heart is angry half the time, I'm insincere, continually frustrated. Really give it to, put it in my hands.

Moses – 80 Years to this Place / Nile Blood – Lice – Red Sea – Water Rock

What's in your hand Moses, it has taken me 80 years to put it there Moses. Throw it down Moses, give it to me and I will give it life. It's just a rod, is it? It will turn the Nile River to blood; it will turn the earth to lice so the Magicians of Egypt will say it is the hand of God. This staff you thought you knew so well will part the Red Sea and deliver a Nation. Moses you will strike a rock with it and it will bring water for a nation.

Turns into Snake / He Runs

Moses throws it down, and it turns into a snake and Moses takes off running, God says get back here, pick it up by the tail, and it turns back into a rod. Moses thought he knew it so well, did he ever think of that. Yet Moses will have no idea what more it will do:

(Exodus 4:3 NKJV) And He said, "Cast it on the ground." So he cast it on the ground, and it became a serpent; and Moses fled from it.

(Exodus 4:4 NKJV) Then the LORD said to Moses, "Reach out your hand and take it by the tail" (and he reached out his hand and caught it, and it became a rod in his hand),

What's in Your Hand / Watch Out – Medocity / Missed – Passover – Exodus – Red Sea – 80 days

What's in your hand husband, is it a wife, is it children. How about your business or job? If you are not careful you may live the rest of your life out in mediocrity. Moses could have said, no I'm happy here holding this stick watching sheep. He would have missed the first Passover, the exodus of Egypt, the parting of the Red Sea, 80 days on the mountain of God - where his face reflected the glory of God. The presence of God passing before Him. The Mount of transfiguration with Jesus and Elijah. Is it just a rod?

God is Beckoning You / We say But – Consider This / We Run

Is God beckoning you to give Him what is in your hand. But maybe you are saying, but did you ever think of this, or are you running from it, as God says give it me, throw it down in front of me and I will give it life.

Big Mistake / ** Moses Reaches Point of Believing / Interprets In Light of God

Sometimes we think the thing in our hand is a mistake part of our failure. Moses finally reached the point of surrendering his life; he reached the point that he believed that God could do anything with what was in his hand, he began to interpret things not in light of who he was, but in light of who God was.

It is Now God's Rod

We see in verse 20 - Moses carried this rod for 40 years - now he is taking it, and carrying in light of who God is. It is now the rod of God:

*(Exodus 4:20 NKJV) Then Moses took his wife and his sons and set them on a donkey, and he returned to the land of Egypt. **And Moses took the rod of God in his hand.***

What's In Your hand / Throw it Down / HumDrum – or Perceptive

Will you look at what is in your hand, your spouse, kids, your parents, your job, and say it is the Rod of God in my life, and He desires to great things in my life through them or it. What is in your hand, children, spouse, job, talents?. Do you know your circumstance so well that it is just the humdrum of life. Church on Sunday, back to work on Monday. Or are you perceptive enough to seek His face, and hear Him say "throw all this down before me so that I may give it life".

All these Years / Despise The Person / Constant Reminder of Failure / Interpreted

God says it has taken all these years of your life to bring you to this circumstance, this place in your life; it is my sovereign tapestry woven to bring you to this place. Do you despise the person you are married to, to the kids you have, that job, that boss, your health, your condition. Do you look around you and say this is the mediocrity of my life, a constant reminder of my failures, I could have been Prince of Egypt, and instead it is the rotten shepherd staff in my hand. Have you only interpreted life in light of who you are? He says to you throw it down in front of me, your life, surrender it, so I can reach an unsundered world, and set people free from the lost world.

1 Message / Unsundered

God essentially has one message to this lost world, and that is you are mine. Yet how does He send the message to those lost people, he does it threw his people. It is an unsundered world, and therefore God cannot send an unsundered life to reach an unsundered world. God will not send an unsundered man or woman to an unsundered generation because He desires to make our life part of our message. Moses what is in your hand, what is in your hand.

Before Our Next Study /

Before we begin the next few studies on submission, will you lay whatever it is in your hand and say, "It is now the rod of God". My wife is the rod of God in my life and He will do great things in my life through her. My children, my job, my activities, my parents, my school, my church, they are "now the rod of God", and He will do great things in my life through them.

Who Knows What He May Do Through You / Time for Salvation

Maybe you are saying I'll never be a Billy Graham or Mother Theresa, who knows what God has saved you for in this day. God is beckoning us, saying you do know what I will do with you in these days. Some of you have been putting it off, you know you need to be saved, but you are saying, but God, what about this, have you considered this, I once had an abortion - how could you ever love me, I did drugs, I rip people off, God is saying just put it down in front of me and I will give it life.

What's In Your Hand / Lay it Down & I'll give it Life

God is saying what is in your hand? Put your life down in front of me, and I'll give life to it.

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission of the Flesh - The Principles of Fasting (2:11)

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, "feeding His sheep".

The Dispersed

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Emperor Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the framework of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission of the Flesh - Principles of Fasting (2:11)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unties these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- *Perfect* - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- *Established* – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- *Strengthen* – to make one strong;
- *Settle* – to lay a foundation.

Kingdom Business / War Zone

Fasting is Kingdom Business. Today we are here to do serious Kingdom business for fasting will impact the Kingdom of God, and do damages against Satan's kingdom. You are now entering the Spiritual Warfare Zone. Fasting takes the battle to the enemy; the enemy is always bringing the battle to us, but in fasting we take the battle right to enemy - it is an awesome thing.

(1 Peter 2:11 NKJV) Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul,

War in Your Body / Body verse Spirit

There is a war going on in your body, as man is made up of body, soul, and spirit; the battle is between the flesh wanting to control our lust and bodily appetite, and the Spirit putting them in submission.

Going to Fast

I'm going to fast, I'm going too fast. When we talk about going to fast, most minds will think about speeding down the Route 100, of going a 100mph in the morning trying to get the kids ready for school. Fast, that is our life, we just go and go, way too fast. The Lord tells us to fast, to slow us down, so that we might become recalibrated.....

Outline: Submission of the Flesh - The Principles of Fasting (2:11)

- The Principle/Purpose of Fasting
- The Power from Fasting
- The Plan for Fasting

Church Poll / Don't Like Sacrifice / 1 Peter 2:5 – Spiritual Sacrifice

I would not want to take a poll today in the church and find out how many Christians have ever fasted, or how often they do, I too would be ashamed too many times. For you see we as a church, we don't like to sacrifice. Oh yes in verse 5 of chapter 2 we are called to make spiritual sacrifices, but do we really:

*(1 Peter 2:5 NKJV) you also, as living stones, are being built up a spiritual house, **a holy priesthood**, to **offer up spiritual sacrifices** acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.*

Holy Priesthood / Come Into His Presence

Notice - *a holy priesthood*: Not only are we children in the same family and stones in the same building, but we are priests in the same temple. We are a "holy priesthood" and a "royal priesthood. In the Old Testament period, God's people had a priesthood; but today, God's people are a priesthood. Each individual believer has the privilege of coming into the presence of God (Heb. 10:19-25). We do not come to God through any person on earth, but only through the one Mediator, Jesus Christ (1 Tim. 2:1-8).

Because He is alive in glory, interceding for us, we can minister as holy priests. This means that our lives should be lived as though we were priests in a temple.

We Don't Bring Animal / Bodies – Lips – Good Works – Money – Soul Winning

Christians today do not bring animal sacrifices as did the Old Testament worshipers; but we do have our own sacrifices to present to God.

- We ought to give “our bodies” to Him as living sacrifices (Rom. 12:1-2):
(Romans 12:1 NKJV) *I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you **present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service.***
(Romans 12:2 NKJV) *And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.*
- As well as the praise of “our lips” (Heb. 13:15)
(Hebrews 13:15 NKJV) *Therefore by Him let us continually offer **the sacrifice of praise** to God, that is, **the fruit of our lips**, giving thanks to His name.*
- The “good works” we do for others (Heb. 13:16).
(Hebrews 13:16 NKJV) *But do not forget to **do good and to share**, for **with such sacrifices** God is well pleased.*
- The money/material things we share with others in God’s service is a spiritual sacrifice (Phil. 4:10-20).
(Philippians 4:16 NKJV) *For even in Thessalonica you sent aid once and again for my necessities.*
(Philippians 4:17 NKJV) *Not that I seek the gift, but I seek the fruit that abounds to your account.*
(Philippians 4:18 NKJV) *Indeed I have all and abound. I am full, having received from Epaphroditus **the things sent from you**, a sweet-smelling aroma, **an acceptable sacrifice**, well pleasing to God.*
- Even the “people we win to Christ” are sacrifices for His glory (Rom. 15:16).
(Romans 15:16 NKJV) *that I might be a minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, **ministering the gospel of God**, that the **offering** of the Gentiles might be acceptable, sanctified by the Holy Spirit.*

Bodies – Living Sacrifices / Christian Walk – Great Day to Believe / I Was Hoping

Look at number 1, presenting our bodies as living sacrifices. I like to quote that verse all the time, I like that verse until I have to actually sacrifice, withhold something from myself, then I am not exactly excited about it that much. The Christian walk in America, we like the concerts, the café, the contemporary church - hey it's a great day to be a Believer. We say to the Lord, I was hoping for hope, I was hoping for health, I was hoping for healing, I was hoping for happiness; God says I was hoping for holiness. Ouch we may say, that will require sacrifice on my behalf, surrender.

Pulled Away / God Gives us Fasting / Gee Lord / America Eats

Then God says I know how hard it is for you because I know how easily you are distracted and pulled away. Pulled away by work, pulled away by children's activities, yes, even pulled away by ministry. Therefore, I am going to help you, I am going to give you something to slow you down, to help you refocus, to help you recalibrate your compass. I am going to give you fasting. Fasting, you mean the not eating type of fasting? Gee, thanks Lord. We don't say yippee, hurray, I'm not going to eat. Why? Because we Americans like to eat, consider this: In your lifetime, the average American will eat 150 cows, 26 sheep, 310 hogs, 25 lambs, 2400 chickens, 1000 fish, 92 turkeys, and 50 acres of fruits and vegetables. Per year you will consume 6 gallons of ice cream, 45 gallons of soda, 23 pounds of pizza, 263 eggs, and 142 pounds of sugar. Per day in America, 100 acres of pizza will be consumed, 27 million doughnuts, 55 million hot dogs, and 71 million burgers, today.

How Important is Christianity / Not If – But WHEN

Christian, is your Christianity important enough to you for you to skip a meal. Let's be clear about this, fasting is expected of you. Fasting is one of the most neglected spiritual admonitions. Notice the when you give, when you pray, when you fast; not if you give, if you pray, if you fast, but WHEN.

(Matthew 6:2 NKJV) *“Therefore, **when you do a charitable deed**, do not sound a trumpet before you as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory from men. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward.....*

(Matthew 6:5 NKJV) *“And **when you pray**, you shall not be like the hypocrites. For they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the corners of the streets, that they may be seen by men. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward.....*

(Matthew 6:16 NKJV) *“Moreover, **when you fast**, do not be like the hypocrites, with a sad countenance. For they disfigure their faces that they may appear to men to be fasting. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward.*

(Matthew 6:17 NKJV) *“But you, **when you fast**, anoint your head and wash your face,*

(Matthew 6:18 NKJV) "so that you do not appear to men to be fasting, but to your Father who is in the secret place; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly.

To Know to Do Good

Again, when you give, when you pray, when you fast; not if you give, if you pray, if you fast, but WHEN.
(James 4:17 NKJV) Therefore, to him who knows to do good and does not do it, to him it is sin.

Discipleship / Teaching not Preaching / Bible People who Fasted

Christian, hear this, salvation is free, but discipleship will cause you your life. Ray, are you preaching today? No, I'm not, I am teaching, for the Scriptures tell us we are to fast. Fasting was demonstrated both in the NT and the OT, and Jesus Himself fasted. Paul fasted, David fasted, Meshack, Sahaderach, Abednego, Moses, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Nehemiah, Daniel, Ester, and Elijah they all fasted. Notice, all these people listed here made mighty impacts on their world and society. They all were men and woman of great godly character. Christian, at some point you have to do the Bible. Not just read it.

A Demonstration of Faith / Deny Self – Pick up Cross

Fasting is faith, it demonstrates how serious we are about our faith, serious enough that we will sacrifice, deny ourselves.

(Matthew 16:24 NKJV) Then Jesus said to His disciples, "If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me.

(Matthew 16:25 NKJV) "For whoever desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake will find it.

Not Getting from God – But getting God / Flesh Down - Spirit Up

Now, Fasting is not about us getting something from God, but about getting God Himself. Fasting pushes the flesh down, and raises the Spirit up. Thus the principle/purpose of fasting.

The Principle/Purpose of Fasting

Resisting the Flesh – Releasing the Spirit

Fasting pushes the flesh down, and raises the Spirit up. Fasting is resisting the Flesh, and releasing the Spirit.

Slow Down / Breaks Routine / Bring Focus to the Lord

Why? Because fasting slows us down, breaks the routine of life, and it brings you to focus on one thing - the Lord. Every time your stomach growls or you smell food, your mind will go to the fast, which will take you to the Lord.

Attaching – Detaching / Prayer Releases God's Power

Prayer attaches us to God, Fasting detaches us from the flesh. It is a beautiful combination of attaching and detaching. Fasting has to be coupled with prayer. I don't fully understand it, but I believe it by faith; Prayer releases God's great power to change the course of nature, people, and nations.

Flesh Wants Satisfaction / You Say No / Fasting Builds a Discipline in Us

Your flesh says satisfy me, but you say No. The Flesh is always give me, give me, give me. And then you say no, the flesh is what? Did I just hear you correctly? Did you say no? Yes, get use to it, the Spirit controls me, not my flesh. Fasting builds a discipline in our lives of not satisfying every physical urge that comes upon us.

How Often we Know to Do Good / Matt 26

How often do we know we should be doing something, but we just don't have it in us to do it? Yea I really feel the Lord calling me to go serve today at that ministry, or go to that Bible Study, but I just don't like it.

You are not alone,

(Matthew 26:40 NKJV) Then He came to the disciples and found them asleep, and said to Peter, "What? Could you not watch with Me one hour?"

(Matthew 26:41 NKJV) "Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak."

Flesh Takes Us Place / Rom 7

The flesh must be put in submission for it will not take you to the places God desires you to be, only your Spirit can do that:

(Romans 7:18 NKJV) For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) nothing good dwells; for to will is present with me, but how to perform what is good I do not find.

(Romans 7:19 NKJV) For the good that I will to do, I do not do; but the evil I will not to do, that I practice.

Flesh – Carnal / Same Word / Battling Old Nature

I point out to you, the word for "flesh and carnality" are nearly the same word in the Greek. That is what is going on when we fast, we are battling our carnal (old nature), we are saying no to it! Self sacrifice, brings self-control.

(Romans 8:5 NKJV) For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.

(Romans 8:6 NKJV) For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.

(Romans 8:7 NKJV) Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be.

(Romans 8:8 NKJV) So then, those who are in the flesh cannot please God.

(Romans 8:9 NKJV) But you are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God dwells in you. Now if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he is not His.

Selling Out / Work-Money-Fun / Instant Country / Our Bodies Trained through Stomach

Christians all throughout the USA are selling out for things that are worthless. Work is more important than worship, money is more important than ministry, fun is more important than family. How did that happen? Because we live in a country, society, that the minute I want something, I get it. We train our bodies to do that.....and get this, we do it through our stomachs. The minute my body says feed me, I jump to it.

Effects Our Whole Life / Outfit – Video – Entertainment - Electronic

We train our flesh that it is not deprived of anything, and it effects our whole life. Got to have that new outfit, got to have that new video game, got to have that entertainment center, that new electronic gizmo. You know that nagging feeling you have when you missed a meal, we say I'm starving, no your not, that isn't hunger, that's habit, for our bodies are use to being tended to immediately, and never deprived.

Watch How Easier / Flesh Down – Spirit Rises / In-Tune with the Father / Power Released

Say no to the flesh in terms of food, and watch how much easier it is to say no to other things in our lives that carnal, outside of God's will for our life. As you push down the flesh, the Spirit raises up. As we resist the flesh, we release the Spirit in our lives. You will find that it is when you are fasting, that you will be so spiritually in tune with the Father. The flesh isn't screaming at you and tugging on you, you can hear the Father and feel His presence in your life like never before. Fasting links us to the power source in a way that is like no other in our Christian walk.

The Power from Fasting

Must be Spirit Led / Matt 4

Now when the fast is Spirit led, and Spirit directed, then there is power. Now I must make this point, fasting must be Spirit led, and Spirit directed.

(Matthew 4:1 NKJV) Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil.

(Matthew 4:2 NKJV) And when He had fasted forty days and forty nights, afterward He was hungry.

Special Place / Attaching – Detaching / Coupled with Prayer / Not Cure-All / Done Regularly

The fast is God calling you out for a special time just with Him. Prayer attaches us to God, Fasting detaches us from the flesh. It is a beautiful combination of attaching and detaching. Fasting has to be coupled with prayer. If you fast to primarily to lose weight, but try to make it a spiritual fast also, I can tell you from experience you won't get much spiritually out of it. If you fast every certain day of the week, you need to be careful that it just doesn't become another routine in your life. Every fast needs to be Spirit led, and Spirit directed for it to have power. For me personally, God will speak to me in my prayer time, and direct me when to fast. Now, I know fasting is Scriptural, therefore I continually am seeking the Lord on when to fast. A single fast is not a spiritual cure-all, fasting is not some spiritual miracle, but it is a

spiritual discipline just like prayer and the word. Fasting has to be done regularly, just like all the other things.

Spiritual Vision Clears / Clouded By Bombardments / Over 3 Days

Now as your Spirit tells your flesh no, your spiritual vision begins to clear, and becomes clearer and clearer the more submission our flesh is put in. Our minds are clouded by the bombardment of the flesh before us, but the more we say no, the clearer our minds get. If you have ever fasted, especially for any extended period of over 3 days, you are saying I know exactly what you are saying. But if you have not, you may be saying, how can that be? You will never know, until you try it.

Instead of Eating – Seeking / Time Spent Eating / Instead Prayer & Word

What happens is that instead of eating, you are seeking. The time spent preparing the meal, walking to the cafeteria, the time eating the meal, and the time cleaning up the meal - instead that time is to be invested with the Lord. Lord instead of eating I am going to be praying, reading your Word, going for a walk with you. As your appetite for the things of the flesh changes, so will your appetite for the things of the Spirit. Fasting allows the Spirit to enjoy more power over the flesh.

Breaks Strongholds / Feel Powerless / Cigs – drugs – alcohol – pornography - sex

Are there things of the flesh that have a stronghold over you, things you want to get out of your life, things you feel powerless to: Cigarettes - you try to quit smoking but your body screams for the nicotine, and you say ok, ok coming. Same with drugs, alcohol, pornography, sex. All those things release chemicals in your body that always has your body screaming for more.

Flesh Down – Spirit Up / Mystery in Heaven

Fasting will tell your flesh no, it pushes the flesh down, and the Spirit rises, the Spirit is released in you. Fasting will require sacrifice, but do it, and watch the power of God work in your life. One of the greatest mysteries in heaven before the angels is why we don't pray and fast more, and receive all the power that is available for us to live a life that is on-fire for Jesus Christ.

Fast Over / More Appreciative / French Fry – Big Mac / Sudan

When the fast is over, you will be so, so much more thankful and appreciative of what God give you daily. You will realize what a blessing it is to live in a country such as this, one where we chose to fast, not forced to fast because there is no food. The ketchup on a French fry will glisten. A Big Mac will look like two all beef patties, with special sauce, lettuce, tomato, and onion, all on a sesame seed bun. You will be thankful for all you have been blessed with, and that is powerful. You won't just click the channel when they show the starving kids in the Sudan, your heart will understand how blessed you are.

Lunch with God / Not just Routine

Me, when I break my fast, I like to break it at lunchtime. Then I go someplace, just me and my Bible, and I read, pray, and I share the meal with my Heavenly Father, it is special, it isn't just routine, and that is powerful.

The Plan for Fasting

Every time you plan to fast, you need to have a plan for your fast.

Spiritual Warfare / Disruption / Prepare

Like prayer and the Word, fasting will incur much spiritual warfare, at times intense spiritual warfare, for the devil knows the power that comes from fasting and will do all he can to disrupt it. But remember Spirit led, Spirit directed, God has you covered, so just prepare yourself as best you can, and wage the battle when it comes.

Must Be Regular / Lunatic Boy

Now first, your plan for fasting needs to include that you will purpose to fast in a regular basis. Remember the story in Matthew 17 when they bring the boy to the disciples to heal:

(Matthew 17:14 KJV) And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying,

(Matthew 17:15 KJV) Lord, have mercy on my son: for he is a lunatic, and sore vexed: for oftentimes he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

(Matthew 17:16 KJV) And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

(Matthew 17:17 KJV) Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

(Matthew 17:18 KJV) And Jesus rebuked the devil; and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour.

(Matthew 17:19 KJV) Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

(Matthew 17:20 KJV) And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

(Matthew 17:21 KJV) Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.

No One Expected an Emergency / Must be Lifestyle

Here is a key point to understanding, no one that day thought they were going to be trying to heal a lunatic that day, Jesus is saying you have to be in a habitual lifestyle of fasting and prayer to be able to wage the battle against such a thing.

1 Meal – 40 Days / Spirit Led

Fasting may be skipping 1 meal, or 1 day of meals, or multiple days, there are many who do 40 day fasts - amazing. What you chose, it must be Spirit led and Spirit directed.

Challenge / Parents / Spouse / Nation / Church / Youth & Purity

I would challenge every parent to pick a meal, breakfast, lunch, or dinner, and say I am going to skip that meal on that specific day, every week, and I am going to take that time to specifically pray for my child. Or if you have an unsaved spouse, to pray specifically for their salvation. Pray for this nation, pray for our soldiers in Iraq, pray for our President, or pray for this fellowship. If you want me to be a better teacher, then pray for me. You youth, I challenge you to take a meal every week, and say I am going to spend that 15 minutes just to pray for my purity. You know what will happen, the Spirit will give you power to avoid the temptation when it comes; and during those times of fasting and prayer God will show you how precious your body is.

Tell Family / Together / Not Running Errands / Bed Early / See Physician

If you are married, tell your spouse when you are fasting so you don't come home to a pepperoni pizza (its ok to tell your spouse, you aren't being a Pharisee, you are communicating). Maybe pick a day or meal together and specifically pick what to pray for (your kids, your ministry, your marriage, a friend or parent). Fasting must be coupled with not being busy running errands so you can commit that time to prayer, it must be coupled with going to bed early so you can wake up early and spending time with the Father. See a physician before you fast if you have any health issues. Prayer attaches us to God, Fasting detaches us from the flesh. It is a beautiful combination of attaching and detaching. Fasting has to be coupled with prayer.

Day 1 – 2 – 3 / Detoxifying

If you plan on doing an extended fast, anything over 3 days, then just know that day 1 will bring the hunger pains, but day 2 is the hardest because your body is detoxifying. Part of the headaches and nausea you get when you fast is the toxins in your body being released, your body is cleansing itself, detoxifying. It is day 3 when you really start breaking through in your fast into that deeper spiritual connection to the Lord.

Kids & Fasting

What about our kids and fasting? Parents teach your kids to fast. How? Explain to them the principles and power behind fasting. Now I would not withhold nutrition from a child, but I would teach them to say no to the flesh. Say, next Wednesday we will not watch TV, instead we will have a time of prayer and going for a walk. Or, tonight we will not have any snacks or treats like we usually do. Seek the Lord and see what He will say to you in this matter on how to teach your kids to say no to the flesh.

Dr Bright's Guide / 5 40 Days

Before you begin any fast I say it is of the absolute necessity to read Dr. Bill Bright's guide to fasting. Dr. Bright went home to be with the Lord, but through his ministry millions of people have come to know the Lord as their Lord and Savior, and through his ministry millions of Christians have grown deeper in their relationship with the Lord. He did five 40 day fast in his life, and he wrote a short simple guide to help all believers in their fast whether it is one meal or 40 days. I encourage you to read it to gain more insight and knowledge on the subject of fasting, and to help you prepare for your fast. He covers the following:

- Why You Should Fast
- How to Fast Safely
- How Long and What Type of Fast is Right for You
- How to Prepare Yourself Physically and Spiritually
- How to Manage Your Schedule While You Fast
- Dealing with the Response of Family and Friends
- How to Make Your Spiritual Experience the Best it can Be
- Maintaining Nutritional Balance
- What Physical Effects to Expect
- How to Finish Your Fast
- 7 Steps to Fasting and Prayer

[Link to Dr. Bill Brights Guide to Fasting and Prayer](#)

Also read the passages of Scripture that pertain to fasting so you may see men and woman of God who prayed and fasted.

[Link to Scriptures on Fasting](#)

Also, please review the study on: ACTS - The Prayer

(1 Peter 2:11 NKJV) Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul,

Fasting, resisting the flesh, and releasing the Spirit.

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, "feeding His sheep".

The Dispersed

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission of the Flesh - Principles of Fasting (2:11)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unites these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- Strengthen – to make one strong;
- Settle – to lay a foundation.

Practical Stuff / Reminding Stuff / Commendable Stuff – Bless the Lord

Good practical stuff, things we need to be reminded of regularly. Sometimes the word can be convicting to us, but then also the word is commendable. Commendable in that when we are doing the things of the Word, God is commending us saying, "well done thy good and faithful servant, you bless me so". What an amazing thought, that we can bless the Lord.

Gov't & Work / Last Study – Nothing Common – God Called You to It / John 10:10

This study we will talk about two everyday things in our lives, the governing authorities and work. Remember back to last study, nothing God has called you to is ever common. We can get so use to something in our lives, and just feel like it is something common, just part of our everyday life, but that is not true, for there is nothing common about something God has called you to. Grasp that in your life, and you will see God taking you out of the routine of life, into a deeper, exciting, walk with Him.

(John 10:10 NKJV) "The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly.

Abundant Life Here & Now / Everyday Lives

The abundant life is here and now, he isn't just talking about get through this life as best you can, and then get to heaven and you'll be so blessed, no He is talking here and now - today. We live everyday lives, and that is the life people are watching, because they too live everyday lives, and that is where ministry to the unsaved happens, in everyday lives.

(1 Peter 2:11 NKJV) Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul,

(1 Peter 2:12 NKJV) having your conduct honorable among the Gentiles, that when they speak against you as evildoers, they may, by your good works which they observe, glorify God in the day of visitation.

Reminds Them of Sojourners / Get to Heaven / Heaven In Front – Fall Behind Us

Verse 11 Peter reminds them again that they are sojourners and pilgrims, and that they are just passing through. We need to be reminded of this every now and again. I think we fight for things that we really can't hold on to anyways because we are just passing through. When we get to heaven we will say what a waste of time fighting to hold on to certain things that mean nothing in light of all that we see in heaven. If we can keep heaven in front of us, we let a lot of things fall behind us.

War / Campaign Never Short / Plans – Entrenched

Verse 11, there is a war going on, and that war means "to wage a campaign". A campaign is never short, it goes on for a long time. Campaigns are not just something that is spur of the moment; there are battle

plans drawn up, the forces are entrenched, ready for a long battle. If you give into lust it will war against your soul, it will have an effect on you, whatever it is.

Verse 12 the Gentiles refer to the unbeliever.

Evildoers / Ish 5 /

Verse 12, as evildoers. Isn't it so interesting that today the person who is trying to be moral as evil and narrow minded, and those who are immoral are viewed as open-minded and politically correct. Barring things like murder and rape, what is good has become evil, and what is evil has become good. Funny, you can't put a nativity scene up on government property, but yesterday in Annapolis we saw on government property a 15 foot blow-up jack-o-lantern, and a vampire and witch.

(Isaiah 5:20 NKJV) Woe to those who call evil good, and good evil; Who put darkness for light, and light for darkness; Who put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!

Day of Visitation

Verse 12, the day of visitation - the day that unbelieving friend or family member gets saved, and they say your witness played into this, it made me open my eyes. We are to live in purity before the Lost, to let them see purity in us that would cause them to wonder why we are so different.

(1 Peter 2:13 NKJV) Therefore submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether to the king as supreme,

(1 Peter 2:14 NKJV) or to governors, as to those who are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers and for the praise of those who do good.

(1 Peter 2:15 NKJV) For this is the will of God, that by doing good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men;

(1 Peter 2:16 NKJV) as free, yet not using liberty as a cloak for vice, but as bondservants of God.

(1 Peter 2:17 NKJV) Honor all people. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honor the king.

Their Sandals / 6 million Slaves – Nero Emperor / Hung By Toes

Put yourself in these people's sandals; you are dispersed, scattered from all you know, some of them are being persecuted, some are slaves under the Roman Empire, and Peter writes to them and says, "submit to the governing authorities". You think you got it tough in the workplace or this world. Paul is writing to slaves, and he is calling them to be obedient. There were over 6 million slaves in the Roman Empire. Often times they were treated brutally. Caesar Nero, the Emperor at the time of this writing had a slave hung by his toes until the blood suffocated him. Why? The slave accidentally killed his pet quail.

Poetry on Peace / Bloodsucking Leaches

Vidias Polimus, wrote Roman poetry on peace and love. One of his slaves spilled water on the manuscript, so he ordered the slave thrown into a pond filled with bloodsucking leaches, he then went back to his desk wrote more poetry on peace and love.

Honor our Leaders / They Burn us / Nero – Light of the World

Application for us is that we are to honor the Leaders of our Country, State, and County. Yes whether it is George W. Bush, or John Kerry. You mean honor politicians who make us promises to get elected, then once elected they burn us - yes. At the time of this writing the President of the Empire was Caesar Nero, and he use to burn Christians badly - he would in the future burned them literally. Foxes Book of Martyrs says that Nero would dip Christians into wax, tie them to a stake in his garden, light them on fire and race around them on his chariot, naked, laughing, screaming "light of the world", "light of the world". He would take live Christians and place them inside the gutted carcass of large dead animals and then let the dogs loose on the carcass.

Easy to Teach This in USA / Easy to Submit for Us / We have it Great – Remember – Thank Him

You know what, it is a lot easier for me to read this passage, and teach this passage today, then it was when Peter wrote it to these people. Look what they were asked to submit to, compared to what we are asked to submit to. We went to Annapolis and enjoyed the city, we met here today with no fears of persecution, we have it so good, we live in such a great country, may we remember this as we reflect

back on our brothers and sisters who lived in this time. May we remember the blessings of this country as we read about our beloved brethren in North Korea, Iraq, Iran, the Sudan. We have it made, we are so blessed. We could end this study here and should be able to go right into praise and worship, and say I have such a reason to sing His praises. Enjoy this, thank Him for this.

Best Commentary – Romans 13

The best commentary on the Bible is the Bible, lets read Romans 13:1:

(Romans 13:1 NKJV) Let every soul be subject to the governing authorities. For there is no authority except from God, and the authorities that exist are appointed by God.

(Romans 13:2 NKJV) Therefore whoever resists the authority resists the ordinance of God, and those who resist will bring judgment on themselves.

(Romans 13:3 NKJV) For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to evil. Do you want to be unafraid of the authority? Do what is good, and you will have praise from the same.

(Romans 13:4 NKJV) For he is God's minister to you for good. But if you do evil, be afraid; for he does not bear the sword in vain; for he is God's minister, an avenger to execute wrath on him who practices evil.

(Romans 13:5 NKJV) Therefore you must be subject, not only because of wrath but also for conscience' sake.

(Romans 13:6 NKJV) For because of this you also pay taxes, for they are God's ministers attending continually to this very thing.

(Romans 13:7 NKJV) Render therefore to all their due: taxes to whom taxes are due, customs to whom customs, fear to whom fear, honor to whom honor.

Chaos Without Order / Look at Iraq

The policeman, our military is to keep order, this nation would be in chaos without them, our nation would be like Iraq where people believe they are their own law.

Not Like Them / Yield to God / Blessed by God

Now we may not like who is in office, but if we will yield to them, God will bless us. Submission to them, is submission to God:

*(1 Peter 2:13 NKJV) Therefore submit yourselves to every ordinance of man **for the Lord's sake**, whether to the king as supreme, (1 Peter 2:14 NKJV) or to governors, as to those who are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers and for the praise of those who do good.*

*(1 Peter 2:15 NKJV) **For this is the will of God**, that by doing good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men;*

What if Contrary to Word / China – Iran -

Well then you may say, what if they require me to do something that is contrary to God and His Word? God's Word is always supreme. If we became a China or Iran, and the word came down from the government, you can no longer preach the Word - it is illegal, then I would have to call upon the supreme law, the Word of the Lord:

(2 Timothy 4:1 NKJV) I charge you therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom:

(2 Timothy 4:2 NKJV) Preach the word! Be ready in season and out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching.

(Matthew 28:18 NKJV) And Jesus came and spoke to them, saying, "All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth.

(Matthew 28:19 NKJV) "Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit,

(Matthew 28:20 NKJV) "teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age." Amen.

Better Know the Word / Our Authority is Not a Terror – But Minister of Good

But if you are going to not honor the authorities, you had better be sure you are sure of the Word - you'll still go to jail or be punished, but you will be able to stand tall before God and man. At this point, in the country we live in, the Governing authority is not a terror to us, but a minister of good, so it is possible that this will never be an issue to us in our day. But for those of you who miss the rapture, it will be.

For Us Today / Submit – God Will Use That

But for us today, what God is saying to us is that if you submit to the authorities/laws before you, God will use that in your life to make you more like Him; and with that He will make more people to know Him through you.

Every Ordinance / April 15th / Flying Fish / Drinking - Smoking

Please note verse 15 -*For this is the will of God*: It is the will of God that you submit to every ordinance. Which ones would that include besides murder, bank robbery? It would include April 15th, an honest assessment of your taxes, no extra zeros on the deduction side, and no missing zeros on the income side (especially those of you working “under the table”). Or as the State Troopers call it, the flying fish, as they make fun of the Christians doing 95 down the 95 (95 is the Interstate not the Speed Limit). Youth, the drinking age is 21, to buy cigarettes is 18.

The Deal / Picking and Choosing / Every Word is Pure

Here is the deal, once you start picking and choosing which laws of the land to obey and not to obey, you are in a sense picking and choosing which words of God are important and beneficial and which ones are not. You now elevate yourself to be judge of the Word of God. When I got saved I remember saying I like this part about forgiven, and eternally saved from hell, I like that a lot. I like the part where He is going to take care of me and provide for me, but I really don't like this one about this certain thing, or that certain thing. What I found out was the things I thought really didn't apply to me, where the very things that were ruining my life. Oh how happy the day was when I said I surrender ALL! When I said All your Word Lord. Then His word also becomes a shield to protect us.

(Proverbs 30:5 NKJV) Every word of God is pure; He is a shield to those who put their trust in Him.

Word on the Presidency / The Debate

A word on the Presidency and our government officials, we may not respect the person, but it is ever so important that we respect his position/office. Can I give some good advice during this election year; Say you meet someone that is pro-Bush, or pro-Kerry, and you are the opposite, you can have quite the debate with them, but is doubtful anyone's mind is going to be changed when it is over. But if I say, now if John Kerry is elected, I will support him as President of this nation, I will pray for him to be lead by the Lord, and to lead this great nation. There is no debate to that, that person has to walk away and if they are honest with themselves, say you are a noble person, an honorable person. They may even say, what makes them like that, why do they give love, when others give hate, what is it about them?

4 Tuesdays Away / Make Your Vote Count

Also, we are only 4 Tuesdays away from the election; ask the Lord to lead you on fasting and praying every Tuesday up to and on through election day. This is a crucial election and time for this nation. Also, make your vote count, get down to the polls and vote. Always vote for morality, God will take care of the economy, He owns the cattle on a thousand hills.

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Much Space Given / Why? – Nothing Common / God Uses the Ordinary

In the New Testament much time and space has been given on this subject of serving our masters/employers/students. We've had studies on this subject in Ephesians 6, Colossians 3&4, 1 Timothy 6, Titus, Philemon, and now here again in 1 Peter 2. Why, again anything that God calls you to, is not common, it is not ordinary, for He is no ordinary God, and when He is dwelling within you, anything you do becomes extraordinary. We are everyday people doing everyday tasks, and God uses the so-called common everyday things to reach out to the world, and to reach within you to do a work within you as He changes you every day more into His image.

Best Worker

Walter Sawatsky, in *Soviet Evangelicals Since WW2*, tells this story: He overheard two Soviet factory managers in a Moscow restaurant. One told the other that party officials were pressuring him to fire evangelical Christians in his plant, but he said he would not because the evangelicals were his best workers.

Past Study

Let us recap a past study on the blessing of work. Work, that dirty four letter word:

(Colossians 3:23 NKJV) And whatever you do, do it heartily, as to the Lord and not to men,

(Colossians 3:24 NKJV) knowing that from the Lord you will receive the reward of the inheritance; for you serve the Lord Christ.

W-O-R-K

W – Whatever, you do, do it heartily unto the Lord, for it is Him you serve not man. Nothing God calls you to is common, therefore whatever He calls you to, then do it heartily unto Him. Whether it is work or school.

Because work gives you an.....

O – Opportunity, to witness for Him, not in word, but in deed. Hey rejoice if you get all the junk jobs. People will say why are you always so pleasant, even though you get to do all the rotten jobs. Lets face it, good workers get more work, and not always more pay. If there are 100 bricks that need to be moved, and ole Joe is moving kinda slow and can only do 40, that means you get to do your 50 and Joes 10. Hey rejoice that the company sees you work over and above your minimum requirement. Companies should be calling churches and saying do you have anybody there that needs a job, we find the best workers are these people who say they are born-again Bible Believers, man they really get the job done.

The Amish have a saying, "witness for Christ, and if all else fails use words." Let you first witness at work be your hard work, your work ethic and integrity. If you can't witness first through that, if you are a 40 brick worker causing others to pick your 10 short up, then please just keep your mouth shut, you will give people reason to blaspheme the Lord.

But you hard workers rejoice in your job, because you are witnessing for Christ in deeds and actions, and be assured people are watching.

Students- the same goes for you on your campus, what a great place to witness for Christ.

3. W-O-R-K,

Whatever you do, do it heartily unto the Lord, because work gives you a.....

R – Reason, to praise Him with thanksgiving for His provisions. Tell ya what, miss a paycheck or two, you will get a whole new perspective on your job. Let the rumors of layoff come around, and you'll realize what is at stake.

Our Father who art in heaven we pray.....give us this day our daily bread. Work is our daily bread.

(Matthew 6:9 KJV) After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.

(Matthew 6:10 KJV) Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.

(Matthew 6:11 KJV) Give us this day our daily bread.

When I worked at Sikorsky aircraft, I can remember Supervisor Demarco saying, "I want all you complainers to go down to the unemployment line and complain to that guy standing in line; and after he punches you in he nose, he will then come down and apply to take your job."

The children of Israel wondering in the wilderness complained about the daily bread, manna, that supplied their physical needs everyday. Be careful about complaining about your job or you may find yourself purging quail through your nose. Father, thank you for "giving us this day, our daily bread".

Students you will be thankful when you are out of your parents house, out of college, and making your own paycheck living on your own. I was going to work in the mills of Pittsburgh which is honorable work,

but thankfully my parents made me get an education because guess what, all the steel comes in through China now.

4. W-O-R-K

Whatever you do, do it heartily, as to the Lord and not to men, - Verse 24

K – Knowing that from the Lord you will receive the reward of the inheritance; for you serve the Lord Christ (Colossians 3:24 NKJV)

You have to know who your real boss is or you will continually be frustrated at work.

Hey Gang, the more they treat you poorly, and you keep your witness, the more your reward in heaven will be, and here on earth because you will become more like Jesus.

You know what, I appreciate a good dumping every now and again – almost weekly now. It keeps me in the right perspective, invest in heavenly things, not earthly things. If I work to please man, so the boss man recognizes me, he is man and he will let me down. More times than not, they will take it as an opportunity to use me for their advantage.

I should work hard while I am there, but not get so wrapped up I neglect my family, devotion time, and ministry.

How often I'll be driving home thinking about what I need to do. Or I'll skip my morning devotion so I can hurry to work to get working...sometime 10-12 hours a day.

Then I say after weeks on a big project, and I get overlooked, or taken advantage of, why did I trade temporal things for eternal things. I can't get that time back. There is always opportunity to make money another day, but never an opportunity to get the time back. Once our time is spent, it is spent for life.

Students, do your studies on to the Lord, it will change the way you look at school.

(1 Peter 2:18 NKJV) Servants, be submissive to your masters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the harsh.

(1 Peter 2:19 NKJV) For this is commendable, if because of conscience toward God one endures grief, suffering wrongfully.

Above Applies

Everything we just studied in submitting to authorities applies here also because they are so close in terms of our lives.

Easy to Submit / Respect Position / Monster.com / Don't Yell Back / Remember Sojourners

Verse 18, it is easy to submit to a gentle and kind boss, the boss who gives you raises and praises all the time, but to submit to a harsh boss, a terrible boss, that is a toughie. You know, for the average person, probably one of the most unfair places in the world is in the workplace. You know, like why is he boss, why does she get that much money, why do I have to pick up his slack. You may say I can't respect my boss, he is a jerk. You are not respecting the person, but the position they are in. Now I am not saying that you can't go out to monster.com and see what else is out there, but the point here is that we are to react to these things differently than the way the world does, yell back, argue, gossip. Remember also, Peter starts this section off by reminding us that we are pilgrims and sojourners, just passes through, don't try to hold on to things that we really can't hold on to, don't respond the way the world does.

Take It – Don't Respond / COMMENDABLE / Like My Son

When we take it and don't respond like the world, that is verse 19, commendable. It is commendable before the world because God sees so much of His Son in you, and that blesses Him.

(1 Peter 2:20 NKJV) For what credit is it if, when you are beaten for your faults, you take it patiently? But when you do good and suffer, if you take it patiently, this is commendable before God.

(1 Peter 2:21 NKJV) For to this you were called, because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that you should follow His steps:

Christ Our Example

Christ suffered and left us an example, an example we are to follow.

Jesus Totally Innocent – Kept Silent / Imagine that in Work Place

Jesus was falsely accused, whipped, spit upon, and He was totally innocent and completely right, yet he reviled not back. Can you imagine that in the workplace, when you get dumped on, you like a lamb led to a slaughter, say nothing in anger or reviling back. People will see the difference and they will know, they will know, when hard times fall upon them, who has the peace in their lives. They will know the place of hope, when their life is falling apart.

(1 Peter 2:22 NKJV) "Who committed no sin, Nor was deceit found in His mouth";

(1 Peter 2:23 NKJV) who, when He was reviled, did not revile in return; when He suffered, He did not threaten, but committed Himself to Him who judges righteously;

(1 Peter 2:24 NKJV) who Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, having died to sins, might live for righteousness; by whose stripes you were healed.

(1 Peter 2:25 NKJV) For you were like sheep going astray, but have now returned to the Shepherd and Overseer of your souls.

Jesus in Action

Look at Jesus in action, in these circumstances:

He was reviled - did not revile in return

He suffered - did not threaten back.

Takes More Holy Spirit / Die to Self

You know it takes more Holy Spirit to do the above things than to preach to the multitude, talk in tongues, teach Bible studies, or do missions. The things above we must die to ourselves, we suffer unjustly and yet you keep your mouth shut. That is real Christianity right there.

Peter Saw those Stripes / We Were Being Led / True Freedom

Verse 24 - **by whose stripes you were healed:** Peter saw those stripes first hand, he remembers them, he isn't just writing a story, he is recanting history. We were being led to the slaughter, but returned (means turned to) to the Shepherd. People who say I won't come to Jesus and all His rules and regulations, it is total bondage, I want my freedom. That freedom leads to the slaughter. The Christian Life is true freedom, for our Shepherd leads us into green pastures, and He Shepherds us, feeds us, and leads us to dwell in the house of the Lord forever.

Model and Enabler

Jesus is not only the model, but He is also the enabler. He was the Lamb that was slain, but now is the resurrected One who is the Shepherd over the Flock.

World Watching / Everyday Works – Everyday People / God Uses the Common Things

The world is watching, Gentiles there in verse 11 mean non-believers, and they are watching our works, our everyday works. We are everyday people, living out everyday tasks, and that is what the world sees as they look at us. In the context of this section on "Remember Our Example Before Men", the things that are so common are the things that God uses the greatest. The Surrendered Life is our great witness before men,

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Wives - 3:1-6

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, "feeding His sheep".

The Dispersed

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the framework of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission of the Flesh - Principles of Fasting (2:11)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unties these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- Strengthen – to make one strong;
- Settle – to lay a foundation.

Statistics / Bookstore / Jesus' Teaching on Marriage

Well, according to statistics the divorce rate among professing born-again Christians is equal with that of the world. The challenges of a Christian marriage are evident in the Christian bookstore, racks upon racks of books on marriage. It is interesting that if you took all of Jesus' teachings on marriage it would take you about 10 minutes to read them over the 4 gospels. The main teaching in Matthew 5:31-32 and Matthew 19:3-9.

Bible Instruction Book / Vertical – Horizontal / Gov't – Marriage / Appeal to New Birth – not World

This whole Bible is an instruction book on relations. Our vertical relationship with our Creator, our Father in Heaven, and our horizontal relationships with each other, whether husband and wife, or our neighbors and co-workers. In these passages we are studying here in 1 Peter, on submission to governing authorities, to our employer, and now here within marriage, all appeal to our new birth, that higher nature, for we are sojourners and pilgrims living to a higher calling than the world. So we are being told in these passages not to live like the rest of the world, not to pattern our marriage and relationships like the world, but to the higher calling.

Stay in School

We do that right here, by staying in school, going through the Bible and the Bible going through us, don't play hooky, your relationships will suffer. God teaches you through your personal study time, but He also says that He brings it to light in a special way when we gather together and the word is opened from the pulpit:

(Titus 1:3 NIV) and at his appointed season he brought his word to light through the preaching entrusted to me by the command of God our Savior,

Marriage Counseling / Wed & Sun / The Transformation Process

When people ask me about marriage counseling, I tell them marriage counseling is held on Wednesday and Sundays, as we go through the Bible and the transformation process happens, as we are not conformed to this world but transformed by the renewing of our mind:

(Romans 12:1 NKJV) I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service.

(Romans 12:2 NKJV) And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

Again – Nothing Common / I Do – God's Will / Settle That

Now, again, I must point out our past few studies, nothing God calls you to is common, for He is no common God. Everything He calls you to is extraordinary because He is an extraordinary God.

Therefore, your marriage is not common, nor is it a mistake. The minute you said I do it became God's will, settle that in your heart and mind right now, and then cast all doubts into the great abyss. This is your spouse, for life.

Marriage Not Always Easy – But Nothing More Beautiful / God Glorified

Yes, marriage is not always roses, but a Christ-center marriage, more beautiful than any sunset in Maui or mountain top view in Colorado. When the family is strong, the nation is strong, and when the nation is strong, God is glorified. Godly marriages bring God glory.

Theme of Suffering / More Like Jesus / Context – Back to Chp2

However it is interesting that this book has a theme about suffering, and marriage is smack dab in the middle of this book. As I have said before, nothing will make you more like Jesus Christ than marriage, for you will have to learn to die to yourself. We need to go back to the end of chapter 2 for the context of these studies:

(1 Peter 2:21 NKJV) For to this you were called, because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that you should follow His steps:

(1 Peter 2:22 NKJV) "Who committed no sin, Nor was deceit found in His mouth";

(1 Peter 2:23 NKJV) who, when He was reviled, did not revile in return; when He suffered, He did not threaten, but committed Himself to Him who judges righteously;

(1 Peter 2:24 NKJV) who Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, having died to sins, might live for righteousness; by whose stripes you were healed.

(1 Peter 2:25 NKJV) For you were like sheep going astray, but have now returned to the Shepherd and Overseer of your souls.

Jesus Not Revile back / Example for Marriage / Reconciliation – Right / Chose Battles / Sojourners

Notice Jesus when they reviled against Him, did not revile back, when they made Him suffer He did not threaten them back; He is our example and that is a great example for marriage. Don't revile back and that argument will end a whole lot sooner. It is better to reconcile than be right. For reconciliation to happen someone has to die. Couples, chose your battles wisely in your marriage, don't try to hold onto to every foothold, remember all these things are passing away and we are just sojourners and pilgrims, and lots of this stuff we fight to hold on to, when we get to heaven we are going to say why did I invest so much and be aggravated by such things. Gang, for every relationship, sometimes we must endure misuse and mistreatment for the sake of the Big Picture.

Teenagers – Singles / Potential / Expectations

Teenagers and singles you will be married someday, you will watch your friends get married, you will need to know your roles and responsibilities within your marriage, what to be looking for in a potential mate, and to be able to give your friends godly counsel when their marriage needs it.

Outline:

- The Hidden Witness (1 Peter 3:1-2)
- The Hidden Beauty (1 Peter 3:3-5)
- The Hidden Enrichment (1 Peter 3:5-6)

The Hidden Witness

(1 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Wives, likewise, be submissive to your own husbands, that even if some do not obey the word, they, without a word, may be won by the conduct of their wives,

(1 Peter 3:2 NKJV) when they observe your chaste conduct accompanied by fear.

Unbeliever / Unequally Yoked / Heartache / No One to Share Salvation / Fancies of Youth

He starts by addressing woman married to an unbeliever. Let me just say this to anyone who is unequally yoke and considering marriage, read this section, you can read the pains and struggles in this verse of being married to an unbeliever. Ask anybody who is on-fire and in love with Jesus, and they will tell you of the heartaches that they live day in and day out. No one to share the joys of salvation with, instead it is "keep that Jesus stuff to yourself", no one to join with you in calling upon His name in times of need, instead it is "where is your God now". I want to go fellowship with my brothers and sisters, while they want to stay home and watch TV or go someplace that makes you feel dirty. Lets do missions, no lets go skiing. The fancy of youth will fade away, and you will mature and desire deeper things, and there is when the battle will intensify. It is a life of pain, and I can tell you because the Word says so, sooner or later, your life and relationship with Jesus will suffer.

Own Husband / Married Eyes of Lord / 25 Cents

Verse 1- to your own husbands: Notice it says to your own husband, beware of some false teaching out there that says woman are to submit to all men, no just your husband. Also, woman if you are dating some guys who says we are married in the eyes of the Lord, tell them you are not married until the Pastor says your are, and if that isn't enough, go back to the last study and show him you are to submit to governing authorities and they say we are not married without that marriage certificate. You youth, your fathers will give you a quarter today, and you carry it with you at all times, and if that boyfriend says he wants a kiss or more, hand him that quarter and say call my dad, if he says it is ok with him, then it is ok with me.

Here's the Plan / Eye Gate – Ear Gate / Tracts in Sandwich / Living Epistle

So God is saying here is the plan, if we can't reach him through the ear gate, then we will reach him through the eye gate. So don't put tracts in between his sandwich so when he bites into there it is, don't preach to him, don't sneak out to his car and tune the radio to 95.1; rather let him watch you, the living epistle:

(2 Corinthians 3:2 NKJV) You are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read by all men;

(2 Corinthians 3:3 NKJV) clearly you are an epistle of Christ, ministered by us, written not with ink but by the Spirit of the living God, not on tablets of stone but on tablets of flesh, that is, of the heart.

Observe – Spectator / Not One Play – Dealing with Gov't – Boss – Friends / Be a Witness

Verse 2 - when they observe your chaste conduct: He will observe you. This word observe was the word used for a spectator at a sporting event. Your husband will observe you, in all of your dealing. He isn't watching one play, but the whole game. He will watch you in all of your dealings, not just with him, but how you deal with the governing authorities, your boss and work ethics, how you talk with or about your friends and family and neighbors. We are to be a witness, not so much we are to witness.

Ear Gate / Constant Badgering / Done hearing From You

A closing note on wives trying to get their husbands to come around to the Lord's way or to their way of thinking (whether saved or unsaved), remember the ear gate, when he is done hearing from you, then he will be able to hear from the Lord. If you are constantly talking, badgering him, about something - then all he will ever hear is your voice. When you are done talking, then he will be able to hear the voice of God.

The Hidden Beauty

(1 Peter 3:3 NKJV) Do not let your adornment be merely outward; arranging the hair, wearing gold, or putting on fine apparel;

(1 Peter 3:4 NKJV) rather let it be the hidden person of the heart, with the incorruptible beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is very precious in the sight of God.

(1 Peter 3:5 NKJV) For in this manner, in former times, the holy women who trusted in God also adorned themselves, being submissive to their own husbands,

Not Wear Makeup / Verse 5 / Kosmo – Order from Chaos / Paint the Barn

Now this passage is not saying that a woman should not wear make-up. Notice verse 5 he says holy woman of past times adorned themselves. To say that woman should not wear makeup or fix themselves up, is legalism. The word translated “adorning” is kosmos in the Greek, and gives us our English words “cosmos” (the ordered universe) and “cosmetic.” It is the opposite of chaos. So adornment is bringing order out of chaos. I think it was JV McGee who said if the barn needs paintin, then paint it. All kidding aside, woman are beautiful, they truly are, for that is how God made them.

Priority / Inward vs Outward / Skin Deep – Bone / Some are Just Shells / Doors Swing Open

What is being said here is priority. Woman, are you as concerned with your inward beauty as you are your outer beauty. You know the saying, beauty is only skin deep, but ugly goes all the way to the bone – you know what it's true. There are woman that all their focus is on the outward beauty, and when you get to their heart there is no beauty, just a coldness, some a meanness, many just selfishness, me – me. Some beautiful women are just shells because their beauty has stunted their mental and spiritual growth. Their beauty opens doors for them, gets them free things, surrounds them by the in-crowd, and they

never have to develop themselves, life is easy, they never have to want, and it is sad when you meet them.

Gentle & Quiet / The Opposite Harsh & Quarrelsome / Hours – Snow / Harsh - Hailstorm

Verse 4 - with the incorruptible beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit: A gentle and quiet spirit, a spirit that is characterized by a tranquility and peace and trusting in God. The opposite of gentle and quiet is harsh and quarrelsome. You know you can listen to a woman with a gentle and quiet spirit for hours on end, they are just soothing to your soul, like fresh snow falling in the winter, they are such a blessing to be around. But ten minutes with a harsh quarrelsome woman will drive anyone crazy. Then multiply that day after day, month after month, and you can see why that marriage has problems. They are like a hailstorm and you have no shelter to go into.

Done Hearing from You

Again, wives, when your husband is done hearing from you, then he will be able to hear the voice of God.

Speaking of Beauty

Speaking of beauty, I must say, and I don't like to compare this church to other churches, but the women are more beautiful in this church than any church I have ever been in, even ones ten times our size, it's true. But anyway, moving on to our next point, wives submitting.

The Hidden Enrichment

Submission is contrary to the way of the world, but when a woman submits to God's word, God's plan for her life and marriage, she is blessed and her family is enriched. Submission is a hidden jewel waiting to be found in every marriage.

(1 Peter 3:5 NKJV) For in this manner, in former times, the holy women who trusted in God also adorned themselves, being submissive to their own husbands,
(1 Peter 3:6 NKJV) as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose daughters you are if you do good and are not afraid with any terror.

Poison in Tea

Louis Talbot, preaching at a mega-church in Los Angeles called the "Open Door", in the early 1900's. He taught on wives submitting to their husbands. After the service he was greeting the people and a rather large lady in a flower dress with a big hat on got right up in his face and said, "your message was disgusting...wives submitting to their husbands in everything." She said if you were my husband I'd put poison in your tea, he said ma'am, if I was your husband...I'd drink it.

No Volumes – No Encyclopedias / Sums it Up

God doesn't right volumes of books for marriage, He doesn't give us the Bible, and then give us an encyclopedia on marriage, rather He sums it all up in Ephesians for us, brings marriage down to this simple formula:

(Ephesians 5:22 NKJV) Wives, submit to your own husbands, as to the Lord.....

(Ephesians 5:25 NKJV) Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for her,

Love – Submit / He Knows Your Needs / Wired & Programmed / Loved - Lead

Men love your wife, and wives submit to your husband. God knows what your needs are, He knows how we are wired because He wired us, He wrote the code for our programming. Women want to be loved and secure in that love, that the love will always be there. Men want to lead.

No Leading – Insecurity / I Better Get Involved / Man Feels Threatened / Wife not Loved - Cycle

Now when a man isn't leading the home as he should, the woman becomes insecure, she is thinking if he really loves me the way he says he does, he wouldn't be doing this, so I better get involved here, I better start protecting myself, I better make sure I am taken care of, and there comes the problems for the man feels his leadership is threatened and he starts to battle and defend his leadership. When he does that the wife doesn't feel very loved, and the cycle just continues.

Sharp Dressed / Military Term / Same Battle / Modern Example / Final Commander-in-Chief

Ladies, the sharp dressed Christian woman today is wearing "submission". You may say well I don't like that idea, let me explain something important of what this word means. This word submit was used as a military term when this was written. The soldiers were all fighting the same battle, side by side, and each knew their role and responsibility in the battle to win. A modern example would be this: We go to war against the Taliban, each military division (Army, Navy, etc) gives its counsel to the war planning board. The Navy says we can launch Tomahawks from sea, the Air Force says we have studied their defenses and feel we can knock out their missiles, the Army and Marines say we can't fight conventional, we need to do commando raids at first, then massive ground battles.....everybody gave their input based on their experience and strength. The Commander - in - Chief and his advisor then came up with the Final battle plan. He then passes it down to his troops, and everybody knows what their role and responsibility is. They submit to the final plan, trusting that leader has planned it carefully.

Imagine – We go it Alone / Bombing their Own / Husbands Listen – Wives Perform Role

Imagine as ridiculous as it sounds, but the Army saying we don't like that plan, we are going in alone.....our own bombs would be dropping on our own men. This is what is happening in many marriages today, we are bombing our own people, because everyone wants it their way. Each military branch performed as directed, fought side-by-side, and the resultant was victory. That is how it is to be applied in marriages. Husbands you need to listen to your wives advice and wisdom, and then you need to go off and make a plan that will ensure success, and then you must come back and communicate it clearly to your wife and family. Wives even if you don't agree with the plan, you need to perform your role and responsibility.

Back V4 / Gentle & Quiet / Home to Have Peace & Order

Going back to verse 4 – the gentle and quiet spirit. What is going on in many Christian marriages is anything but that. The home is to have peace and order, but too many homes it is strife and disorder, as everyone is battling for ground.

Single Girls / Looking Our for Her / Don't Settle for Less / If Married Can't Pick & Choose

Many singles girls say to me I'm not going to submit to my husband, I don't believe in that stuff. For the majority of them, I say I well I met your boyfriend and if you marry him I wouldn't want to submit to him either. Don't settle for less gals, wait until God brings you that man of God, and guess what, it won't be as hard to submit as you think it is, because the man of God will be looking out for His bride, thinking about her, desiring to please her. Yes he will make mistakes, is subject to sin, but in the whole will be looking out for you more than himself. Jesus is his example and the word says he must die to himself for his bride, don't settle for anything less.

Wives Submit / Husband – What Like to Submit to You

God says wives submit to your husband. But I must ask every man this question when I teach this, how would it be for you to have to submit to you. Would it be easy? Are you a worthy leader, are you leading as you should? We will talk to you next study, stay in school, stay in school, no hooky next week.

In Context – Even Unsaved

So as we see in context, this even applies if you are married to an unsaved man. Back to the beginning of this study, your life will be hard married to someone who is living according to another instruction manual.

God's Word always Supercedes

The great debate is, how far are you to submit? Woman, submission is never in contradiction to the word of God. God's Word always supercedes your husbands and the government:

(Psalms 138:2 NKJV) I will worship toward Your holy temple, And praise Your name For Your lovingkindness and Your truth; For You have magnified Your word above all Your name.

Can't Pick & Choose / Sarah Example / Enriched the Family

If you already are married, you can't pick and choose which commands of God to follow, all means all, do you want to protect your marriage, then submit to every word of God:

(Proverbs 30:5 NKJV) Every word of God is pure; He is a shield to those who put their trust in Him.

Verse 6 - as Sarah obeyed Abraham: Gives Sarah as an example. Sarah's family was enriched because of her submission. God prospered her and her family. They left Egypt with loads of riches. He was very rich, this is the first "rich" is used in the Scriptures and it is because Sarah was submissive, not Abraham. God will enrich your family for submitting. Wives submit, and God will protect you through his bonehead mistakes, and he will enrich your family.

(Genesis 13:1 NKJV) Then Abram went up from Egypt, he and his wife and all that he had, and Lot with him, to the South.

(Genesis 13:2 NKJV) Abram was very rich in livestock, in silver, and in gold.

Obey – Listen Attentively / Men Struggle Too

Verse 6 – Obeyed: means to listen attentively, to be attentive to his needs, it means to listen and listen again. Can your husband share his feelings with you. Woman don't believe this tough outer shell stuff, men struggle with very much the same things you do.

Your Fulfillment In Jesus / Asked of the Lord – not Your Husband

Verse 6 - and are not afraid with any terror: Your husband is not Jesus, never will even come close, you must find your fulfillment in Jesus, don't look for you fulfillment in your husband. He is a helpmate, to walk with you, not for you, he is a helpmate to help you draw closer to Christ, but not be your Christ. Fulfillment anywhere else will bring fear into and upon your life. These things that are being asked of you, are being asked of you by the Lord, your Shepherd, the King of your heart. Don't do these things for your husband, for he will give you plenty of reasons not to, but do them for the Lord, for He will never give you reason to quit.

What's In Your Hand

What's that in your hand? It's my husband, good I'll use that for my glory in you, and through you.

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Husbands - 3:7

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, "feeding His sheep".

The Dispersed

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission of the Flesh - Principles of Fasting (2:11)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unties these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- Strengthen – to make one strong;
- Settle – to lay a foundation.

Now Husbands / 6-1 / Keep it Simple / Saul-Saul

Peter now is going to turn his attention to the husbands. He spent six verses talking to the wives, but only one for the men. Wonder why, could it be that he is saying woman you need six times more instruction because it is six times harder to be married to a man. Or could it be that Peter is saying I have to make this as simple as I possibly can, one verse, real simple, in fact this sermon should only be 10 minutes since the average man can only make it 8 minutes before he has to get up and check the refrigerator and see if something magically appeared since the last time he looked in it. It is interesting in the Scriptures that when God called men in the Bible many times he had to say their name twice. Saul, Saul. Samuel, Samuel. Abraham, Abraham. Hah, what, are you talking to me? God knows men oh so well

Statistics / Bookstore / Jesus' Teaching on Marriage

Well, according to statistics the divorce rate among professing born-again Christians is equal with that of the world. The challenges of a Christian marriage are evident in the Christian bookstore, racks upon racks of books on marriage. It is interesting that if you took all of Jesus' teachings on marriage it would take you about 10 minutes to read them over the 4 gospels. The main teaching in Matthew 5:31-32 and Matthew 19:3-9.

Bible Instruction Book / Vertical – Horizontal / Gov't – Marriage / Appeal to New Birth – not World

This whole Bible is an instruction book on relations. Our vertical relationship with our Creator, our Father in Heaven, and our horizontal relationships with each other, whether husband and wife, or our neighbors and co-workers. In these passages we are studying here in 1 Peter, on submission to governing authorities, to our employer, and now here within marriage, all appeal to our new birth, that higher nature, for we are sojourners and pilgrims living to a higher calling than the world. So we are being told in these passages not to live like the rest of the world, not to pattern our marriage and relationships like the world, but to the higher calling.

Stay in School

We do that right here, by staying in school, going through the Bible and the Bible going through us, don't play hooky, your relationships will suffer. God teaches you through your personal study time, but He also says that He brings it to light in a special way when we gather together and the word is opened from the pulpit:

(Titus 1:3 NIV) and at his appointed season he brought his word to light through the preaching entrusted to me by the command of God our Savior,

Marriage Counseling / Wed & Sun / The Transformation Process

When people ask me about marriage counseling, I tell them marriage counseling is held on Wednesday and Sundays, as we go through the Bible and the transformation process happens, as we are not conformed to this world but transformed by the renewing of our mind:

(Romans 12:1 NKJV) I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service.

(Romans 12:2 NKJV) And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

Marriage counseling is not just for marriages that are struggling, but to keep marriages strong, to keep them from that point of struggling. Nothing beats preventative maintenance.

Again – Nothing Common / I Do – God’s Will / Settle That

Now, again, I must point out our past few studies, nothing God calls you to is common, for He is no common God. Everything He calls you to is extraordinary because He is an extraordinary God.

Therefore, your marriage is not common, nor is it a mistake. The minute you said I do it became God's will, settle that in your heart and mind right now, and then cast all doubts into the great abyss. This is your spouse, for life.

Marriage Not Always Easy / Ann Graham / God Glorified

Yes, marriage is not always roses. They asked Billy Graham's wife if over the course of their marriage if she ever considered divorce, she said divorce, never, murder, yes. I like what she said about marriage, she said the hardest thing about marriage is that it is so daily. When the family is strong, the nation is strong, and when the nation is strong, God is glorified. This nation is not strong, because most families are split. Godly marriages bring God glory. Marriage is tough, and a strong marriage will have unbelievers saying how is it possible.

We will see 4 things that God calls and tells men to see and attain in their marriages:

- Dwell with your Wife
- Know your Wife
- Honor your Wife
- Be Enriched by your Wife

Disclaimer / the Manual / Stick to the Script

Disclaimer, I have a long way to go in the area of being a husband, I'm glad I have the instruction manual and don't have to figure this out alone. But I know through the study of the word, and the calling on of the Holy Spirit, all these things can happen and they will get better and better everyday of my marriage, as long as I stick to the script.

Singles / Youth

You singles and youth, learn these things now, as long as you keep breathing, most all of you will be married and will want to know these things now before you enter into the sacred marriage covenant. And single woman, don't settle for anything less than these characteristics in a man.

(1 Peter 3:7 NKJV) Husbands, likewise, dwell with them with understanding, giving honor to the wife, as to the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers may not be hindered.

Dwell with your Wife

Verse 7 - Husbands, likewise, dwell with them:

Dwell / Not Just Share a House / Eph 5

Husbands we are called to dwell with our wives. He is not just talking about sharing a house and a bedroom. Ephesians we are told to love our wives as Christ loved the Church:

(Ephesians 5:25 NKJV) Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for her,

1st thing Jesus Did / Car Alignment / Not a Distraction / Men PreOccupied

The first thing Jesus did for his Bride was enter into her/our world. He didn't say come up her, get with my program, instead He came down to us. Men if our car is out of alignment, the tires are going to wear unevenly, the car is not going to drive smoothly on the road, eventually the tires are going to blow out. So too if your marriage is out of alignment. Jesus came into our world, and so too must we come into our

wives world. We were not a distraction to Him, yet sometimes that is what are wives feel like, that they are just a distraction to us. A man can be so occupied with his job, his team, his activity, his ministry, that the wife feels like she is just a distraction, that you would rather be taking care of other things.

Question – Is Wife Lonely / Eve Never Alone / Dwell - Refuge

Men, question, is your wife lonely. Are you there, but somewhere else? Men realize this, Adam was there when Eve opened her eyes, Eve/woman never knew what it meant to be alone. Adam was alone before God brought Eve to him, he was use to being alone, even though God said it is not good that man be alone. Often through the Scriptures the word for dwell means “refuge, sanctuary” I think there is good application there for us as husbands, that we become a place of refuge and sanctuary for their lives, when the world is against them, the kids are terrible, that they have a place they know they can come to and be comforted, to not feel like a distraction, a place where the storms of life rage, but she can feels secure.

Abide With / Abide In / Every Thought / Easy to Submit / She not a Distraction – but Priority

Dwelling doesn't just mean we are living together, but we the word means to abide with, to live in. We are to live in our wives, if you will; the two become one, every thought is a thought for the two. We talked about woman submitting last week, and me if you are dwelling with your with, living in her, you will make decision that will be the best for both of you, and it will be much easier for her to submit, to follow your leadership, because she will be safe and secure knowing that you love her, and you are looking out for her. She will know that she is not some distraction, but your most immediate priority. You dwell with her, come into her world, come into alignment with her. Men you dwell with your wife, and she will follow you anywhere.

To Dwell – Have to Know

To dwell with her, you will have to know her.

Know your Wife

Verse 7 - Husbands, likewise, dwell with them with understanding:

Gnosko / Come into Her World

The word for understanding here is "gnosko" which means, "to know". You'll only know her by coming into her world, aligning your self with her, and then listening to her.

Don't Struggle Why She Different / Something Missing – Brings Balance / Kleenex

Don't struggle with why she is different than you, just know that she is different. Men we will never understand why woman are so different than us, and vice-verse, but know this, all the way back in the garden man has been missing something (the rib), we are not all there, and the woman now has the piece that is missing. My wife brings me balance. I'm a facts and fix it person, she is brings that gentle side, that what about their feelings. Do you notice that at the men's retreats there are no Kleenex boxes? The only reason they would be there would be if someone has a cold, but at a men's retreat you can just use your sleeve. Woman's retreats there are boxes every third chair, boxes in the hallway, boxes in the rooms, that's why the woman's retreats always cost more than the men's. They are different, we need to know that, and we need to know them, come in line with their difference, and not demand and expect them to conform to our differences.

Your wife's definition of love is different than yours men, you will find that out, only after you know them. You won't be able to give them the love they need until you see their difference from you.

2 Ways to Know Deeper / The Word – Heb 4

Husbands do you want to know how to know your wife deeper than you do today, two ways? One, Know the word. You see the word gives you deeper understanding into all things. Spending time in the word will enrich your marriage:

(Hebrews 4:12 NKJV) For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

Listen to Her / Time for Coffee / 3 Levels of Communication

You will only be able to do this by listening to them, talking with them, dwelling with them. Men when your wife wants to talk, needs to talk, you need to be there. Marriages die out after the communication dies. Listen to her, make time for coffee with her, just the two of you, turn the television off. Keep yourself spiritually discerning of what her needs are, you will do this by prayer and the word. Three levels of communication with your wife, very important; there is talking and you can keep watching and listening to the television, then there is hmmm hit the mute button but can keep watching, and then there is the turn it off and put the remote on the table - you have my undivided attention. You can't keep the remote in your hand because that means to her you still want to get back to the television, and remember your wife is never to feel like she is a distraction to you.

Question – Is She Lonely

Men, question, is your wife lonely. Are you there, but somewhere else?

Know to Honor

Knowing will flow to honoring her, you should study her, know her, so you can honor her.

Honor your Wife

Verse 7 - giving honor to the wife, as to the weaker vessel:

Deserving Honor / Place Value On / Same as Precious – 1:19

Your wife deserves to be honored. Honor means to place a value on, this is the same word used in 1 Peter 1:19 for the word “precious” as used with the precious blood of Jesus:

(1 Peter 1:18 NKJV) knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers,

(1 Peter 1:19 NKJV) but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.

See Correlation / Not to Handle Carelessly / Dare use Same Word / Marriage not Common

Do you see the value she is correlated to? I think it is purposeful that Peter uses this same word here, as he relates how precious your wife is to you. She isn't something that you just handle carelessly, something that is common to you, but something that has value that you would dare use it in the same sentence structure as the precious blood of Jesus. Your marriage is not common, your wife is not common, for your God is no common God, nothing He gives or calls you to will ever be common, for He is the extraordinary God. How precious is your wife to you. This knowledge we have just gleaned from the Scripture begs us husbands to honor her.

Rabbinical Teaching / Ransom / Picture of Jesus / Value of Wife

The rabbinical teachings stated the husbands duties included providing for his wife the necessities of life (Ex 21:10) such as food, clothing, and shelter. Conjugal duties, medical care, proper burial, andto provide a ransom for her in the event she was taken captive by enemy nations. She had a value, she was worth the ransom. Do you see the picture of Jesus Christ providing Himself the ransom for His Bride, us the Church, and the husband is to love his wife just as Christ loves the Church, that the husband puts such a value on his bride he would pay a ransom for her, even his life.

Honor – Appreciate – Consider / Don't Stop Dating / 5-10-15

Honor her, appreciate her, consider her, and don't stop dating her. You singles that are dating right now, don't do anything today for her that you are not going to be willing to do for her 5-10-20 years from now.

Bride of Youth

And when she is older continue to Honor her, she is the bride of your youth:

(Proverbs 5:18 NKJV) Let your fountain be blessed, And rejoice with the wife of your youth.

(Proverbs 5:19 NKJV) As a loving deer and a graceful doe, Let her breasts satisfy you at all times; And always be enraptured with her love.

Spring Chicken / Never Feel Old / Look Down – Turn Away / More Beautiful Today – Dwell - Know

She is the bride of your youth even when she no longer is that spring chicken. Men, never let your wife feel old, honor her. Look down, look away in the mall (that's honoring her); keep the remote in your hand ready to click. It can be a line we just say to be endearing, honey you are more beautiful today than when I first married you, but you know what, it will be true if you allow yourself to know her more, dwell with her, come in line with her, for your heart will see her as the precious vessel she is, and not according to Madison Avenues definition of beautiful. Hold her hand, open the door for her, honor her as God's precious daughter.

Dwell – Know – Honor / She will Enrich You

Men, Dwell with your wife, Know your wife, Honor your wife, and you will be enriched by your wife.

Be Enriched by your Wife

Verse 7 - giving honor to the wife, as to the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers may not be hindered:

She is Rich / Heiress / Make you Rich / Need Her – You Missing Something

An heir, an heiress, she is rich, you are married to an heiress. She can enrich you men. Your wife is a joint-heir of spiritual truths and insights. Men you need her, no matter how strong you think you are, you still need her, remember in you something is missing.

Joint-Heirs / Rom 8

Same word used here for us being joint-heirs with Christ:

(Romans 8:16 NKJV) The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God,

(Romans 8:17 NKJV) and if children, then heirs; heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified together.

Not Inferior Spiritually / Weak Physically/ Keep Order

Do you see the relationship, the idea here is not that the woman you are married to is by any means inferior spiritually, only weaker physically. We studied last study the order in the marriage by God's design, but we see here it is not because they are spiritually weaker, for we see they are joint-heirs in the spiritual things.

You Enriched / Sarah Did / Look for Riches – not Faults

Your wife will enrich you, I mention last study of Sarah enriched Abraham. The family was not enriched because Abraham was so great, he let her go into a harem, and told her to lie in order that it might happen; but God protected her, honored her submission, and the resultant was they left Egypt enriched. Husbands God will enrich you, because of your wife. Look for the riches in your wife, not the faults, failures, and irritants.

Prayers Hindered / Not Right in Home / Married to Kings Daughter / Ever Dad Knows

Men here is a key to your marriage today, that your prayers be not hindered. When things are not right at home, they will not be right anywhere.

Verse 7 - and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers may not be hindered:

Men mistreatment of your wife hinders your prayers, why, because you are married to the Kings daughter. Every father knows what I am talking about. Every guy who is dating a young girl, are also dating their father, they just don't know it.

Mistreat her – Mistreat God

You are married to one of the Kings daughters, and if you mistreat her, God says you are mistreating Him. God says talk to her like you are talking to me, treat her like you would treat me. Remember that next argument that arises in your home.

Bookends – Example of Christ - Silent

The Bookends of this teaching to and for wives and husbands, the example of Christ at the end of chapter 2, and verses 8-12 here in chapter 3.

(1 Peter 2:21 NKJV) For to this you were called, because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that you should follow His steps:

(1 Peter 2:22 NKJV) "Who committed no sin, Nor was deceit found in His mouth";

(1 Peter 2:23 NKJV) who, when He was reviled, did not revile in return; when He suffered, He did not threaten, but committed Himself to Him who judges righteously;

(1 Peter 2:24 NKJV) who Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, having died to sins, might live for righteousness; by whose stripes you were healed.

(1 Peter 2:25 NKJV) For you were like sheep going astray, but have now returned to the Shepherd and Overseer of your souls.

(1 Peter 3:8 NKJV) Finally, all of you be of one mind, having compassion for one another; love as brothers, be tenderhearted, be courteous;

(1 Peter 3:9 NKJV) not returning evil for evil or reviling for reviling, but on the contrary blessing, knowing that you were called to this, that you may inherit a blessing.

(1 Peter 3:10 NKJV) For "He who would love life And see good days, Let him refrain his tongue from evil, And his lips from speaking deceit.

(1 Peter 3:11 NKJV) Let him turn away from evil and do good; Let him seek peace and pursue it.

(1 Peter 3:12 NKJV) For the eyes of the LORD are on the righteous, And His ears are open to their prayers; But the face of the LORD is against those who do evil."

Jesus Not Revile back / Example for Marriage / Reconciliation – Right / Chose Battles / Sojourners

Notice Jesus when they reviled against Him, did not revile back, when they made Him suffer He did not threaten them back; He is our example and that is a great example for marriage. Don't revile back and that argument will end a whole lot sooner. It is better to reconcile than be right. For reconciliation to happen someone has to die. Couples, chose your battles wisely in your marriage, don't try to hold onto to every foothold, remember all these things are passing away and we are just sojourners and pilgrims, and lots of this stuff we fight to hold on to, when we get to heaven we are going to say why did I invest so much and be aggravated by such things. Gang, for every relationship, sometimes we must endure misuse and mistreatment for the sake of the Big Picture.

Times to Keep Quiet / No Round 2 / Rift between You & God / More Holy Spirit

Husbands, like Jesus, there is a time to just keep quiet. Imagine how many fights would never make it to the second round if we would just keep silent. But for us husbands, God gives us a strict command to honor our wives, for mistreatment of her will cause a rift between us and Him. Men, it takes more Holy Spirit to treat your wife right than it does to preach to the multitude or raise the dead. Honor your wife, treat her as the daughter of God that she is, and you will be enriched.

Wife Will Follow You Anywhere / Peter Married / Took Wife on Mission Trips

Men, do these things, and your wives will follow you anywhere. I can say that with confidence according to the life of the writer of this letter, Peter.

Peter was married:

(Matthew 8:14 NKJV) Now when Jesus had come into Peter's house, He saw his wife's mother lying sick with a fever.

Peter took his wife with him on missionary journeys:

(1 Corinthians 9:5 NKJV) Do we have no right to take along a believing wife, as do also the other apostles, the brothers of the Lord, and Cephas (another name for Peter)?

She Left All / Enriched His Ministry / Even to Death – Remember thou the Lord

Peter's wife got saved, she left all they knew to go with Peter and proclaim the good news. Imagine how enriching that was to Peter, having his wife there to counsel the woman, balance his ministry, to be that threefold cord that would lift him up when he was discouraged. She followed her husband even to death. Church tradition says that Peter was forced to watch his wife be crucified in front of him, before his own crucifixion, and his final words to his wife were, "remember thou the Lord." Then Peter was crucified; he plead to be crucified upside down because he did not feel worthy to be crucified in the same manner of Jesus. (from Eusebius who was a church historian in the 3rd century. He was citing the testimony of Clement who was a n early church leader in the 2nd century)

Life of Peter & Wife / Best Example of Eph 5

The life of Peter and his wife are the greatest example of Ephesians 5, wives submit to your husbands, husbands love your wife.

4 Things Husbands

4 things that God calls and tells men to see and attain in their marriages:

- Dwell with your Wife
- Know your Wife
- Honor your Wife
- Be Enriched by your Wife

Know What to Do – Now Do It / World Can't Touch Counsel

Peter writes to remind us; we know what to do, the hard part is doing! Men we have to die to self, that's the only way. The world can't touch this counsel from Peter, Dr.Phil, Oprah, the 150 dollar an hour couch, their counsel can not touch these words from the Lord to us husbands. The Lord keeps it simple for us, now all we have to do, is do what the word says to do.

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

(1 Peter 3:8 NKJV) Finally, all of you be of one mind, having compassion for one another; love as brothers, be tenderhearted, be courteous;

(1 Peter 3:9 NKJV) not returning evil for evil or reviling for reviling, but on the contrary blessing, knowing that you were called to this, that you may inherit a blessing.

(1 Peter 3:10 NKJV) For "He who would love life And see good days, Let him refrain his tongue from evil, And his lips from speaking deceit.

(1 Peter 3:11 NKJV) Let him turn away from evil and do good; Let him seek peace and pursue it.

(1 Peter 3:12 NKJV) For the eyes of the LORD are on the righteous, And His ears are open to their prayers; But the face of the LORD is against those who do evil."

This passage of Scripture is a bridge into the next section on suffering, but it is also part of the "Bookends" for the topic on husbands and wives. These verses need to be studied in the context of the central theme of this book, and the flow of the topics.

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, "feeding His sheep".

The Dispersed

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission of the Flesh - Principles of Fasting (2:11)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, **perfect**, **establish**, **strengthen**, and **settle** you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unties these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- Strengthen – to make one strong;
- Settle – to lay a foundation.

Flowing to Next Topic

We are now flowing into our next topic of this wonderful epistle as we start to focus more specifically on suffering, which is a major theme of this epistle.

Suffering in Context of Marriage / Bonding or Bickering

Suffering in the context of marriage we just study is important. When the days get difficult, husbands and wives can either find themselves binding and bonding, or bickering and biting. These passages are important because marriages can come together at these times, but often they unravel because of them. Understanding suffering is very important, very vital for every marriage, and of course every believer.

Old Preacher – Young Man

Not long ago I heard a story about a young man and an old preacher. The young man had lost his job and didn't know which way to turn. So he went to see the old preacher. Pacing about the preacher's study, the young man ranted about his problem. Finally he clenched his fist and shouted, "I've begged God to say something to help me. Tell me, Preacher, why doesn't God answer?" The old preacher, who sat across the room, spoke something in reply--something so hushed it was indistinguishable. The young man stepped across the room. "What did you say?" he asked. The preacher repeated himself, but again in a tone as soft as a whisper. So the young man moved closer until he was leaning on the preacher's chair. "Sorry," he said. "I still didn't hear you." With their heads bent together, the old preacher spoke once more. "God sometimes whispers," he said, "so we will move closer to hear Him." This time the young man heard and he understood. We all want God's voice to thunder through the air with the answer to our problem. But God's is the still, small voice, the gentle whisper. Perhaps there's a reason. Nothing draws human focus quite like a whisper. God's whisper means I must stop my ranting and move close to Him, until my head is bent together with His. And then, as I listen, I will find my answer. Better still, I find myself closer to God. (Author Unknown)

Be Still / Struggled Here / Deep & Profound / Can't Hear how Simple

When you are suffering, for whatever reason, be still, pull out the studies from this epistle. I really struggled with this study. I read and re-read it, I was looking for the deep truths. This passage goes back into the Old Testament, pulls verses out from Psalms and Isaiah, I surely thought there must be something very deep and profound here because Peter is quoting OT in his epistle. I struggled to make it profound, deep, but then I saw it, it is not meant to be profound, it is so simple, it is profound. When suffering comes, we can be so busy ranting about our problem, that we can't hear God. God makes it simple for us, that when we are suffering, you need only look at two things, attitude, and altitude.

The Outline for this Study:

- Attitude – How we look at Suffering – 1 Peter 3:8-14
- Altitude – Where we look during Suffering – 1 Peter 3:14-17

Peter Understands Suffering / Beaten & Imprisoned / Crucified

Peter understands suffering, he knows suffering, and he learned through his suffering that the Lord delivers His righteous. He was beaten and imprisoned, and eventually in the end according to church writings, he was forced to watch his wife crucified, and then he himself was crucified. Yet in the end he said to his wife, "remember thou the Lord". Peter knew he could trust the Lord, even with the suffering of death. He would not recant his belief or witness to escape suffering.

Prison Rome 5 Months / Waste – Lay Down – Darkness – Breathe – 40 Saved

Church writings tell us that Peter was imprisoned in Rome for 5 months. He was chained to a pole. We know from past studies that those conditions in a Roman prison were horrendous. The cells were next to each other, they had a common trench running through them for the human waste. Most likely he would have been standing in his own waste. You could never fully lay down. You stood in complete darkness; the smell was so horrible that many people died from the inability to breathe. Amazingly church writings say that Peter led some 40 Roman guards to the Lord before his crucifixion. Peter is a person who writes to us about suffering, from living on the side of suffering we can never fully imagine.

Peter is going to move us on and say if you want to love life and see good days, listen to this:

Attitude – How we look at Suffering – 1 Peter 3:8-14

(1 Peter 3:8 NKJV) Finally, all of you be of one mind, having compassion for one another; love as brothers, be tenderhearted, be courteous;

(1 Peter 3:9 NKJV) not returning evil for evil or reviling for reviling, but on the contrary blessing, knowing that you were called to this, that you may inherit a blessing.

(1 Peter 3:10 NKJV) For "

He who would love life

And see good days, Let him refrain his tongue from evil,

And his lips from speaking deceit.

Watch Tongue / Murmur – Complain / Why Me – Why Now

Peter says that when hard times come, watch your tongue. He starts with the abc's of suffering. It is easy to start murmuring, complaining, and say why me, why this, why now? Peter says if you want to love life and see good days, watch your tongue. Whatever your suffering is, if it is your marriage, your kids, your job, your finances, your health, your parents, if you want to love life and see good days, watch your tongue. (go back to our study in James for the "Test of the Tongue")

See Good Days / God Wants to Bless Us / Satan

Gang, God wants us to be a blessed people. He doesn't want to take anything away from us, but wants to see blessings come upon us, that is why He says - "he who would love life and see good days". Satan has done a wonderful job in telling that lie to us that God is keeping something from us (all the way back in the garden). He tells us that God is keeping something from you, rules, rules, rules, the cosmic killjoy. It is on the contrary, God says I know what you need, and if you do the things I say to do, you will love life and see good days.

(1 Peter 3:11 NKJV)

Let him turn away from evil and do good;

Let him seek peace and pursue it.

(1 Peter 3:12 NKJV)

For the eyes of the LORD are on the righteous,

And His ears are open to their prayers;

But the face of the LORD is against those who do evil."

(1 Peter 3:13 NKJV) And who is he who will harm you if you become followers of what is good?

Context of Righteous

These passages in this epistle are written to those who are suffering because of no fault of their own. Some are suffering because of their witness for Christ. So that will be the context over these studies.

Sometimes we suffer because of our own personal sin and foolishness, and repentance is what is needed before anything else can be addressed.

Turn from Evil / Easy to get Carnal / Pay-per-View

Verse 11 says to turn from evil: It is easy when hard times come to get carnal, to let your guard down, to say I just need a break, check out for a while, as you call in for that pay-per-view movie, meet up with the old crowd. Peter says don't do it if you want to see good days. Do you want bad days, call in, stop by. These words are to help us in hard times, not to put us on some legalistic trip.

Drawing Back OT / Psalm 34:12-16 / Writes to Remind Us

Peter is drawing back on the Old Testament, Psalm 34, verses 12-16. Peter knew the word, and he says when the hard times come, remember Psalm 34 (remember that is why he wrote to remind us the things written in the past). Well what is Psalm 34 about? It was written by King David.

David Writes the Psalm / Saul – Gath / Boxed In

David is writing this when King Saul was out to kill him. David ends up of all places in the Philistine city of Gath. Gath is where Goliath was from. It was the killing of Goliath that really started the whole thing with Saul, because the people were saying David killed his 10,000 Saul killed his thousand, and Saul goes insanely jealous over David and wants to kill him. The Phillistines find out David is in this city, and so here it is that David has the Phillistine seeking to kill the man who killed their champion, and Saul with his armies looking to do the same. David is boxed in, nowhere to go. What does David write, I will bless the Lord at all times, and he concludes that the Lord will deliver the righteous:

*(Psalms 34:1 NKJV) I will bless the LORD at all times; His praise shall continually be in my mouth.
(Psalms 34:2 NKJV) My soul shall make its boast in the LORD; The humble shall hear of it and be glad.
(Psalms 34:3 NKJV) Oh, magnify the LORD with me, And let us exalt His name together.
(Psalms 34:4 NKJV) I sought the LORD, and He heard me, And delivered me from all my fears.
(Psalms 34:5 NKJV) They looked to Him and were radiant, And their faces were not ashamed.
(Psalms 34:6 NKJV) This poor man cried out, and the LORD heard him, And saved him out of all his troubles.
(Psalms 34:7 NKJV) The angel of the LORD encamps all around those who fear Him, And delivers them.
(Psalms 34:8 NKJV) Oh, taste and see that the LORD is good; Blessed is the man who trusts in Him!
(Psalms 34:9 NKJV) Oh, fear the LORD, you His saints! There is no want to those who fear Him.
(Psalms 34:10 NKJV) The young lions lack and suffer hunger; But those who seek the LORD shall not lack any good thing.
(Psalms 34:11 NKJV) Come, you children, listen to me; I will teach you the fear of the LORD.
(Psalms 34:12 NKJV) Who is the man who desires life, And loves many days, that he may see good?
(Psalms 34:13 NKJV) Keep your tongue from evil, And your lips from speaking deceit.
(Psalms 34:14 NKJV) Depart from evil and do good; Seek peace and pursue it.
(Psalms 34:15 NKJV) The eyes of the LORD are on the righteous, And His ears are open to their cry.
(Psalms 34:16 NKJV) The face of the LORD is against those who do evil, To cut off the remembrance of them from the earth.
(Psalms 34:17 NKJV) The righteous cry out, and the LORD hears, And delivers them out of all their troubles.
(Psalms 34:18 NKJV) The LORD is near to those who have a broken heart, And saves such as have a contrite spirit.
(Psalms 34:19 NKJV) Many are the afflictions of the righteous, But the LORD delivers him out of them all.
(Psalms 34:20 NKJV) He guards all his bones; Not one of them is broken.
(Psalms 34:21 NKJV) Evil shall slay the wicked, And those who hate the righteous shall be condemned.
(Psalms 34:22 NKJV) The LORD redeems the soul of His servants, And none of those who trust in Him shall be condemned.*

Yet What Does He Write / I Praise – Not Murmur / GOD KNOWS – NOT SURPRISED – ALLOWED IT

You see, David is in the place that he knows that God knows, where he is at, and what is happening, God is not surprised, and that God has allowed it. David starts this Psalm off with I will praise the Lord. David says rather than complain, I am going to praise. Praise will bring good days. You know why, complaining and murmuring won't change the situation, you will still be in the exact same place, just more depressed.

*(Psalms 34:1 NKJV) I will bless the LORD at all times; His praise shall continually be in my mouth.
(Psalms 34:2 NKJV) My soul shall make its boast in the LORD; The humble shall hear of it and be glad.
(Psalms 34:3 NKJV) Oh, magnify the LORD with me, And let us exalt His name together.*

God not Pacing / Praise or Complain

When you are suffering, know that God is not surprised or pacing the Throne Room of heaven, ohh no what are we going to do. God knows what He is doing and going to do, the question is what are we going to do? Will we chose praise or complain.

Why Draw on Psalm / Key to Life – Isn't having a Cushy Life / Opposite Society

Why does Peter draw back on this Psalm and apply it to these people he is writing to who are going through struggles and suffering? Because Peter is giving a key to life, a key to loving life, a key to having good days, a key for all of us here today, the key? The key is not have a life that is cushy and easy or free from difficulty or challenges - that is what our cultural and society says to us; our society says if you could just make life a little easier, just make you life problem free, escape the adversity, insulate yourself from the hard times, then you will have a good life. David through the Holy Spirit says just the opposite.

When Things Bleak – In Gath / Vision Sharpened – God In Control – I Can Praise

It is when you wonder where do I go when school is over; where is the next check coming from, what will the doctor say. It is when things are bleak and blue, it is when you feel like you are in Gath, boxed in, it is there that you will see God move. It is a vital principle, hard times sharpens your vision, for if we take the attitude of David in that Lord you know it, you have allowed, you are not surprised by it, therefore you are in control of it, and I will praise and you worship you for that.

What if we Believed This

Now what if we really bought into this, believed this, claimed James:
(James 1:2 NKJV) My brethren, count it all joy when you fall into various trials,

Not Seek Escape / Seek Discovery

If we bought into this, believed this, we would not be trying to make our life cushier and softer, but we would say Lord I will discover you in a new deeper way. Peter knew these things because he lived them, and the Holy Spirit inspired him to write these things, and reference back to King David and Psalm 34.
*(Psalms 34:4 NKJV) I sought the LORD, and He heard me, And delivered me from all my fears.
(Psalms 34:5 NKJV) They looked to Him and were radiant, And their faces were not ashamed.*

Altitude – Where we look during Suffering – 1 Peter 3:14-17

They introduce the important spiritual principle that the fear of the Lord conquers every other fear.

**(1 Peter 3:14 NKJV) But even if you should suffer for righteousness' sake, you are blessed.
"And do not be afraid of their threats, nor be troubled."**

(1 Peter 3:15 NKJV)

But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts, and always be ready to give a defense to everyone who asks you a reason for the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear;

Quotes Sermon on Mount

In verse 14 Peter is quoting Jesus' Sermon on the Mount. Peter didn't just quote Jesus, he lived it. I say *don't get bummed on not being to quote Scripture, just do the Scriptures and they quote themselves:*
(Matthew 5:10 NKJV) Blessed are those who are persecuted for righteousness' sake, For theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Quotes Isaiah / Ties Psalm 34 / God the Same / Nothing New

Now Peter here at the end of verse 14 and 15, quotes Isaiah 8. He is tying Psalm 34 and David's experience to here in Isaiah and what was going on there hundreds of years apart. Peter is saying God is the same yesterday, today, and forever. So whatever you are going through is nothing new to God or for one of His people. So here again we see it is good to be skilled in the word

Situation – Assyrians from North / Brutal People – Fish Hooks – Pyramid Skulls – Skin Alive

The situation in the writing of Isaiah 8 is that the brutal Assyrians are coming down from the north. The Assyrians are brutal, brutal people, they use to put fish hooks in the mouths of their prisoners and lead them hundreds of miles across the desert back to their land. They would build pyramids of human skulls outside the gates of the cities they conquered, basically "your name here" if you get out of line. They would skin captives alive.

Syria & Israel / God said No Go / Now 3 to 1

Now also, the Syrians (not Assyrians) and the King of Israel (for the Kingdom was divided at this time) came to Ahaz the King of Judah and said join us to fight against the Assyrians. God told Isaiah to tell the

king not to do it, so Syria and Israel get mad and say then we are going to attack you. So now it is three kingdoms against Judah.

Read 911 / Focus on God - Altitude

This is the passage I read to the church that Sunday right after the September 11th attacks. Verse 12 says don't fear the events around you, but let God be your fear and dread, which means "see and focus on His power and might". This is the Altitude, climb high. And verse 14, He (God) will be your sanctuary, that place of safety:

(Isaiah 8:11 NKJV) For the LORD spoke thus to me with a strong hand, and instructed me that I should not walk in the way of this people, saying:

(Isaiah 8:12 NKJV) "Do not say, 'A conspiracy,' Concerning all that this people call a conspiracy, Nor be afraid of their threats, nor be troubled.

(Isaiah 8:13 NKJV) The LORD of hosts, Him you shall hallow; Let Him be your fear, And let Him be your dread.

(Isaiah 8:14 NKJV) He will be as a sanctuary, But a stone of stumbling and a rock of offense To both the houses of Israel, As a trap and a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem.

Hurt Physically / God will Deliver / Releasing the spirit / 10 Years - Terrorists

They might hurt you physically, but God knows how to deliver His righteous. God will deliver His righteous, and sometimes that means releasing the spirit from the body, and calling them home with Him in heaven. Ten years ago I would have been teaching this differently here in America, but this applies for us today. Maybe not what you wanted to hear this morning, but there are conspiracies against this land being plotted right now. There are evil, brutal people who want to harm us. Airplanes, Homicide bombers in the Mall, dirty bombs, they are plotting, they have told us so.

It applies to our everyday lives too, don't worry about what people are saying about you, unless it is true, for you need to only concerned about what God thinks about you.

Climb Out – Reach the Altitude / 911 Not the End / Don't Fear Them / Hostage

300 million people, 3,000 miles of border on top and bottom to cover, several thousand flights a day, September 11th was not the end. But Peter and Isaiah are saying don't live in fear of them, but fear of the Lord, and that is the good fear in that we see His awesome power, and we know we are His, and nothing can separate us from that. I told Renee if I go to Iraq for a Mission trip or something, and I get kidnapped, when the news reporter comes, don't plead for my life, plead for the terrorists lives, tell them they are messing with one of the Kings kid, and repentance is their only hope. What can man do

(Matthew 10:28 NKJV) "And do not fear those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. But rather fear Him who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

The Altitude / Look at things Differently / Suffering gets us Living for Heaven

The Altitude, people going to heaven can take a whole lot of things of this world a whole lot less seriously. But if a person is living for this world, they will take things a whole lot more seriously. You see suffering gets us to live for heaven, as Peter will remind us in chapter 4 - the Lords return is soon..

Cuts the Cord / Hurricane Victims / Lightens our Grip / Keep Main Thing – Main Thing

Suffering in our lives is like knives and scissors cutting the cords that are holding us so closely to this earth. Why is that important, because the lighter our grasp is on the things we think are so important. It is like the unfortunate people in Florida whose homes were destroyed in the hurricane. Had they known their home were going to be destroyed, I doubt any of them would have done those home improvements the months prior. They would have said why bother. Now, imagine if they knew a loved one was going to be lost in that storm. They would have known time is short, I want to invest time with them, be with them. That is why the Lord allows some hardships and struggles in this world for us, so we will lighten our grip on this world and the temporal things, and focus on the eternal things. Suffering frees us up from the worlds pull. A key principle to understand in suffering is that it will keep the main thing the main thing.

Sanctify Heart / Confusion & Fear

Verse 15 - But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: Set Jesus apart in your heart. The altitude is the Lord, but His control center is in your heart. What does it mean to "sanctify Christ as Lord" in our hearts? It means to turn everything over to Him, and to live only to please Him and glorify Him. It means to fear displeasing Him rather than fear what men might do to us. How wonderfully this approach simplifies our

lives! It is Matthew 6:33 and Romans 12:1-2 combined into a daily attitude of faith that obeys God's Word in spite of consequences. It means being satisfied with nothing less than the will of God in our lives (John 4:31-34).

You see, if you miss this principle in suffering, if you allow the surrounding and circumstances into your heart, then fear and confusion will come in, and you will be at the mercy of your emotions. But let the Lord rule in your heart, and you will have the peace to deal with whatever comes upon you.

God not Mad

If you are going through suffering, set apart His unconditional love, know that He loves you. Sometimes when we are suffering we think it is because God is mad at us. Jesus did not leave the throne, become lowly man, be spit upon, whipped, nailed to a cross and crucified, so He can be mad at us. He went to the cross because He loves us. And we suffer, because we live in a fallen world, and God applies the principles we are studying through the suffering. The altitude is to set apart our hearts for the Lord.

Nero's Conspiracy

Peter is pulling this quote in from Isaiah because Nero is/will be starting those rumors about the Christians. A conspiracy, a conspiracy, the Christians eat flesh and drink blood, they say they are the light of the world, they burned Rome. Peter said don't fear their threats and lies, but see the awe of your God. This is the altitude we must climb to.

(1 Peter 3:15 NKJV) But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts, and always be ready to give a defense to everyone who asks you a reason for the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear; (1 Peter 3:16 NKJV) having a good conscience, that when they defame you as evildoers, those who revile your good conduct in Christ may be ashamed.

Ready Defense

Ready defense is the word used for "apologetics". This verse is used to always be ready to give a defense of the Scriptures, and that is cool, we need to be able to discuss Creation, Uniqueness of the Bible, etc. But truly, this Bible needs no defense. As Charles Spurgeon said, the Bible doesn't need defending, its like defending a caged lion, all you have to do is open the door and let the lion out.

Ready Hope

Peter in the context is saying be ready, because people are going to see and know you are going through it, and they are going to say you should be hating life, you should be murmuring, you should be freaked out and bummed out, but instead you are having good days, you are still loving life. We are to be ready to tell them why, it's the Lord.

Astronomers tell us that at this moment there are 1,096 stars visible to the naked eye. Yet in the morning, you can't see even one of them because the brightness of the sun obscures the beauty of the stars. It is only when darkness falls that the stars become visible. That's us!

Bad Conscience

A bad conscience will clam you up, you won't be ready to give a defense of your hope if your conscience is not good. Ever been there, you can tell someone is clearly searching for answers, but you know if you say something they are going to be what, you, you're a Christian. I know the places you go, the people you hang with, the things you do. A bad conscience will clam you up. That is one of the beauties of serving in a ministry, you'll be like I can't do that, I can't go there, that will blow my witness.

(1 Peter 3:17 NKJV) For it is better, if it is the will of God, to suffer for doing good than for doing evil.

God's Will

No one like this idea, but there is suffering in this life that God allows, and it is actually His will:
(1 Peter 4:19 NKJV) Therefore let those who suffer according to the will of God commit their souls to Him in doing good, as to a faithful Creator.

The Cross

The cross was the will of God:

(Isaiah 53:10 NKJV) Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise Him; He has put Him to grief. When You make His soul an offering for sin, He shall see His seed, He shall prolong His days, And the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in His hand.

A good life, comes through hard days, that is so opposite of the worlds thinking.

The Outline for this Study:

- Attitude – How we look at Suffering – 1 Peter 3:8-14
- Altitude – Where we look during Suffering – 1 Peter 3:14-17

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, "feeding His sheep".

The Dispersed / Nero

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission of the Flesh - Principles of Fasting (2:11)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unties these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- Strengthen – to make one strong;
- Settle – to lay a foundation.

Last Study

Last study we started to focus more specifically on suffering, which is a major theme of this epistle.

The Outline for The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

- Attitude – How we look at Suffering – 1 Peter 3:8-14
- Altitude – Where we look during Suffering – 1 Peter 3:14-17

Not Alone in Suffering / Power Through Jesus' Suffering / People Today HS wants to Set Free

God wants us to come and see things from His perspective, and as we ascend, so we see where we are to look during suffering, and in this study we will immediately see we are not alone, for verse 18 will say that Jesus also suffered. Peter will tell us and remind us in this passage of the power, the victory, and submission that came through His suffering. We are to apply these things in our times of suffering. There are people sitting here today who are suffering because they are plagued with their guilt of their past sins and failings. The Holy Spirit wants to set you free today.

Next Time You Suffer / 3 Things not Worry About

And along that same line, next time you are suffering, Peter is going to expound for us three things we need not fear while we suffer, because Jesus has dealt with them, he has been victorious over them. The three things:

Outline for "The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness" - (3:18- 22)

- The Flesh Dealt With: 1 Peter 3:18
- Satan & his Henchman Dealt With: 1 Peter 3: 19-20
- The World Dealt With: 1 Peter 3: 21-22

This study is masterfully designed, for it covers our past, present, and future.

Christian Battle / Eph 2

How interesting that these are the three things that we as Christians battle:

(Ephesians 2:1 NKJV) And you He made alive, who were dead in trespasses and sins,

*(Ephesians 2:2 NKJV) in which you once walked according to **the course of this world**, according to the **prince of the power of the air**, the spirit who now works in the sons of disobedience,*

*(Ephesians 2:3 NKJV) among whom also we all once conducted ourselves in **the lusts of our flesh**, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature children of wrath, just as the others.*

*(1 John 2:16 NKJV) **For all that is in the world; the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life; is not of the Father but is of the world.***

*(Galatians 5:19 NKJV) Now the **works of the flesh** are evident, which are: adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lewdness,*

(1 Peter 5:7 NKJV) casting all your care upon Him, for He cares for you.

*(1 Peter 5:8 NKJV) Be sober, be vigilant; because **your adversary the devil** walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour.*

*(Romans 7:18 NKJV) For I know that in me (**that is, in my flesh**) nothing good dwells; for to will is present with me, but how to perform what is good I do not find.*

(Romans 7:19 NKJV) For the good that I will to do, I do not do; but the evil I will not to do, that I practice.

(Romans 7:20 NKJV) Now if I do what I will not to do, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me.

(Romans 7:21 NKJV) I find then a law, that evil is present with me, the one who wills to do good.

(Romans 7:22 NKJV) For I delight in the law of God according to the inward man.

(Romans 7:23 NKJV) But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.

(Romans 7:24 NKJV) O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death?

All Against Your Mind / Put in Perspective / If Not - Fear Sets In / Diminishing Ability

One, two, or all of these things will come against you and your mind during a trial and period of suffering. Peter is going to put them in perspective for us. For in the context of this passage and theme on suffering, if you allow any one of these things to work on you during a trial or period of suffering, fear will come upon, and that fear and anxiety will control you, and will diminish or totally eliminate your ability to endure that suffering and come out victorious. In times of suffering one or all of these three want to separate you from God, so you are left alone, defenseless and depressed, so you will be easy to work on. But Jesus Dealt with them, Peter writes to remind us of that.

The Flesh Dealt With: 1 Peter 3:18

(1 Peter 3:17 NKJV) For it is better, if it is the will of God, to suffer for doing good than for doing evil.

Remind you, the context is Suffering for Righteousness, so if you are in sin you just need to repent now, and then you won't have to question if the rest of this study applies for you.

(1 Peter 3:18 NKJV) For Christ also suffered once for sins, the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh but made alive by the Spirit,

What He Did / Justified - Judicial Term / Paid in Full

It is not what we do, but what He did. Christ, the Just One, dying for the unjust. He died once, and for all, He paid the penalty of sin in full on the Cross there at Calvary. He has justified us, which is a judicial term that means to "pronounce righteousness". Justified in it's simplest definition is "just-as-if-I-didn't-sin". My sins, shortcomings, and failings have been paid in full:

(Romans 5:1 NKJV) Therefore, having been justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ,

(Romans 8:29 NKJV) For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren.

(Romans 8:30 NKJV) Moreover whom He predestined, these He also called; whom He called, these He also justified; and whom He justified, these He also glorified.

(Romans 8:31 NKJV) What then shall we say to these things? If God is for us, who can be against us?

Start to Question / Is He Mad / Paid in Full - No Wrath / Failings in Flesh - No Haunting

In our times of suffering we can start to question is everything is all right between me and the Lord. Is He mad at me, is He punishing me, is He upset with me? Listen gang, the sins of your flesh were punished and judged on the cross; the full wrath of God was poured out upon Him, so that you would never have to experience the wrath of God. Our failing and faults, forgiven and forgotten, don't let our past failures in the flesh keep us from going on to great things with the Lord, and don't let them haunt you during periods of suffering.

Peter Knew / Cursing in Courtyard

No one knew this better than Peter, he can attest to the goodness of God. Cursing vehemently, he swore he didn't know Him, as he stood in the courtyard of Caiaphas—for just as Jesus said he would, Peter denied Christ. Aware of his failing, he wept bitterly (Luke 22:62).

Went On to Mighty Ministry / He Understood - Sins of Flesh

But, Peter went on from there to become a man who was mighty in ministry, a man who was totally restored because he understood that Jesus Christ died for his sins in the flesh of betrayal, rebellion, and blasphemy.

Same Evening Judas / Betrayed Innocent / Hung himself

That same evening Peter openly denied Jesus, another disciple secretly betrayed Him. After selling Him out for thirty pieces of silver, Judas' conscience bothered him greatly. "I have betrayed innocent blood," he said as he threw the money on the floor of the temple, wanting to reverse the deal. But realizing that the priests would not allow him a way out, Judas hung himself (see Matthew 27:5).

Both Failed / 1 to Hell - 1 to Greatness / Both Chose Tree / Power in Seeing Cross

Both men failed Jesus in the same evening. One went to hell (Jesus said better if he wasn't born Mark 14:21), the other went on to great things. What was the difference? They each chose a tree. Judas chose a tree from which to hang himself. Peter chose a tree upon which to look. Truly, there is great power in seeing the Cross.

Poisoned / Bitten / Looked and Healed / That's Too Simple

"I'm so poisoned," you say. So were the Israelites... By the tens of thousands, they were bitten by snakes that sent poison coursing through their veins. The cure? God told Moses to put a brass serpent upon a brass pole in the middle of the camp—and whoever would look upon it would be healed (Numbers 21:8). Those who took this to be trivial and simplistic died in the desert. Those who simply lifted up their eyes and looked upon the serpent were completely healed. This served as a sneak preview of what would happen when the Son of God would be lifted up, became sin, and hung on the Cross in our place:
(John 3:14 NKJV) *"And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up,*
(John 3:15 NKJV) *"that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have eternal life.*
(John 3:16 NKJV) *"For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.*

Too Simple / Too Much Guilt / Need Years Counseling / Peter Looked to One on Tree

So, too, there are people who say, "Guilt will not dissipate simply by looking to the Cross. What's needed is years of analysis followed by years of counseling." Peter says otherwise. Because he looked to the One hanging on the tree—even though he had been bitten by his own sin—Peter was forgiven immediately and went on to great ministry.

Nail That Sin to Tree / It's That Simple / Need not Suffer over Failures / The Perfect Suffering

Take that sin and nail it to the tree, the cross, for it was nailed there 2000 years ago once and for all. Ray are you saying it that simple, I nail it to the cross and it is done, yes. Listen Christian, you need not suffer for your failures, for He has already suffered for them for you. That is the Perfection in Suffering for Righteousness:
(2 Corinthians 5:21 NKJV) *For He made Him who knew no sin to be sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.*

4 Nails

It was four nails Beloved. I believe four because not one of His bones were broken, and one nail through the top of the foot would break bones, archeological and historical writings give accounts of the nails going through the side of the feet. But be that as it may, or may not be, I see four nails representing the four dimensions of God's love for us:

(Ephesians 3:17 NKJV) *that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith; that you, being rooted and grounded in love,*
(Ephesians 3:18 NKJV) *may be able to comprehend with all the saints what is **the width and length and depth and height;***
(Ephesians 3:19 NKJV) *to know the love of Christ which passes knowledge; that you may be filled with all the fullness of God.*

Nowhere My Love Can't Reach / What's Your Hang-up / Dealt With

God says there is no where you can go and nothing that you can do that my love can't reach you, I proved that to you on the Cross. There is power in the cross. What is your guilt, what is your hang-up, whatever it is you need not suffer because of it ever again, for it has been dealt with by the Perfect Suffering, Jesus Christ.

Verse 18- that He might bring us to God: not leave us in guilt.

Satan & his Henchman Dealt With: 1 Peter 3: 19-20

(1 Peter 3:19 NKJV) by whom also He went and preached to the spirits in prison, (1 Peter 3:20 NKJV) who formerly were disobedient, when once the Divine longsuffering waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was being prepared, in which a few, that is, eight souls, were saved through water.

I Believe - Why Always Thinking of My Sins

"I believe Christ died for my sin," you may say, "but why am I always thinking about my failure? Why am I always aware of my sin and failings?" Why? Revelation 12:10.

(Revelation 12:9 NKJV) So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

(Revelation 12:10 NKJV) Then I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, "Now salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren, who accused them before our God day and night, has been cast down.

You Have Adversary / Perched Shoulder / Keeps Whispering

You have an adversary who perches on your shoulder and whispers in your ear, "You're a sinner. You failed here. You dropped the ball there. He whispers to you it is not that simple, you can't just go to the cross, it not as simple as the Scripture says it is, or that guy up there says it is. You're going to need lots and lots of psychological work to have any hope of recovery because you're a rotten loser, a defiled sinner."

Difference Holy Spirit & Satan / Holy Spirit Draws Closer

What? I thought that was the Holy Spirit telling me I blew it, no it wasn't, and you can always tell the differences between Satan's accusations against you, and the Holy Spirit convicting us of our sin: you can tell by this simple examination, the Holy Spirit's conviction will draw you closer to the Lord, it will always be in terms of love, of drawing you and calling you to the Father:

(Romans 5:1 NKJV) Therefore, having been justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ,

(Romans 8:1 NKJV) There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit.

(Romans 8:2 NKJV) For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death.

Satan Drives Away / Why Bother

Satan, the opposite; his is condemnation trying to drive you away from God. You blew it, what a loser, some Christian, why bother to pray, why bother to read, why bother to go to Church. He says look at you, you don't read like you should, pray like you should, witness like you should, and your thought life, remember that sin last week, all the things to try to push you away from the Lord. If you listen to it, you'll start to believe it, and you will say its true, I am such a loser, why bother.

Simple rule of Thumb

So that simple rule of thumb will show you who is talking to you. Conviction of the Holy Spirit will come with forgiveness, and a word that this isn't the best for you, that God has so much better for you, and point to how you can do better. But Satan will judge and say, hopeless.

Satan's Helpers

Now Satan has his helpers, his demons, his henchman. Satan has demons to do his bidding, and he has plenty of them, and they are casting those accusations against us, whispering them to us:

(Revelation 12:9 NKJV) So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

(Revelation 12:10 NKJV) Then I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, "Now salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren, who accused them before our God day and night, has been cast down.

Follow Theme / Jesus Preached to Them / Not Evangelized

Now look here and follow our test and theme, Jesus has gone to preach to them (the disobedient spirits - speaking of the fallen angels). This word used here to preach is not to evangelize and win souls, it means to preach, to proclaim a truth. Now when and where he preached to them is open for much debate and discuss, read ten commentaries and you'll get ten opinions, all of which distracts from the main point, and that is that Jesus has preached to them, and has proclaimed a truth to them.

What Said - Your Authority Broken / Perfect Suffering

What did Jesus say to them? He said, "Your authority to keep a grip on My people has been broken. The blood I shed washed away every sin he has done, is doing, or ever will do. The perfect provision, the Perfect Suffering, I have made now absolutely, completely frees him or her from your authority."

Only Through Sin Satan had Authority / Sin Gives them Handle

You see, it is only through sin that Satan's demons have authority in our lives. When we sin, we essentially rebel against God and open ourselves to the devil and his demons. They can do whatever they want because the sin in our lives gives them a handle upon which to hold. However, the blood of Jesus is so powerful that it eradicates the sin, thereby obliterating the handle.

Without Handle - Can only Lie

Without that handle, what can Satan and his henchmen do? All they can do is lie to you and me, saying, "There's no hope for you. You've blown it too badly. You've gone too far. You're through."

Not Saved - Devil Food / Guide You Through Sin / Drugs - Sophisticated

You see if you are not saved, have not made Him Lord and Savior, then you are devils food, for Satan to lead you and guide you through your sin, and you don't even realize he is doing so. He can make you a drug user, or a drug dealer, or he can make you a nice sophisticated person, who does well in the business world, a person everybody likes, but a person who thinks I am a good person, my sin isn't that bad, I'm sure I am right with God.

For Believer / Jesus said See The Scars / Your Authority Broken

But for those who saw their need for a Savior, Jesus went to those demons and Satan after his victory on the cross and said see these holes, see these scars, you have no authority, no grip, over my children. Every sin and failing, past, present, and future have been washed with the blood that I shed, the Perfect Suffering.

Conscience Bothering You - Look to Cross / Condemned - Its Satan / Away with You

Is your conscience bothering you? Peter says, "Look to the Cross." If you still feel condemned, realize it's a lie from the Enemy telling you that you're not forgiven, that you're unworthy, that you can't be used, that you've gone too far, that you've been too bad. Realize that Jesus told the very worst of the demons that they no longer have power over you, and tell them what Jesus said in that wilderness temptation:

(Matthew 4:10 NKJV) Then Jesus said to him, "Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve.'"

(Matthew 4:11 NKJV) Then the devil left Him, and behold, angels came and ministered to Him.

The World Dealt With: 1 Peter 3: 21-22

Remember Context / Flesh - Satan - World / Dealt With

Now, remember our context and theme, your flesh has been dealt with, Satan and his henchman have been dealt with, and now we will see the world has been dealt with. The flesh, Satan, and the world, the three things that come against every believer.

(1 Peter 3:21 NKJV) There is also an antitype which now saves us; baptism (not the removal of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God), through the resurrection of Jesus Christ,

(1 Peter 3:22 NKJV) who has gone into heaven and is at the right hand of God, angels and authorities and powers having been made subject to Him.

Picture / Doesn't Save / Public Statement - Obituary - Death Notification / Christ In Me

Antitype means picture, and Peter is going to tell us what the ark and the flood represents for the believer, how it is a picture of baptism. Let me first explain what baptism is. Peter likens the flood of Noah to baptism. We see that Noah was saved in the ark while a sinful world was being judged; but Peter makes sure he points out to us that baptism does not save (the ritual of washing filth) because Jesus' work on the cross does that. What baptism is for the believer is that making a public statement to all of the world, my sins, my failings, my shortcomings, all washed away, buried in the grave. Baptism is your obituary; it is your death notification to your family and friends, that old person, that person living for self is dead and buried:

(Galatians 2:20 NKJV) "I have been crucified with Christ; it is no longer I who live, but Christ lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me.

Don't Bother Calling Old Person / Invite Me - Invite Jesus

Don't bother to call that old person, for he is dead; if you call to talk to me, then you have called to talk to my Jesus. Don't invite me over if you are not willing for Jesus to come:

(Romans 6:1 NKJV) What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin that grace may abound?

(Romans 6:2 NKJV) Certainly not! How shall we who died to sin live any longer in it?

(Romans 6:3 NKJV) Or do you not know that as many of us as were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into His death?

(Romans 6:4 NKJV) Therefore we were buried with Him through baptism into death, that just as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

(Romans 6:5 NKJV) For if we have been united together in the likeness of His death, certainly we also shall be in the likeness of His resurrection,

(Romans 6:6 NKJV) knowing this, that our old man was crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves of sin.

(Romans 6:7 NKJV) For he who has died has been freed from sin.

(Romans 6:8 NKJV) Now if we died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him,

(Romans 6:9 NKJV) knowing that Christ, having been raised from the dead, dies no more. Death no longer has dominion over Him.

(Romans 6:10 NKJV) For the death that He died, He died to sin once for all; but the life that He lives, He lives to God.

(Romans 6:11 NKJV) Likewise you also, reckon yourselves to be dead indeed to sin, but alive to God in Christ Jesus our Lord.

(Romans 6:12 NKJV) Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body, that you should obey it in its lusts.

(Romans 6:13 NKJV) And do not present your members as instruments of unrighteousness to sin, but present yourselves to God as being alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness to God.

(Romans 6:14 NKJV) For sin shall not have dominion over you, for you are not under law but under grace.

Junk & Gunk Buried / White as Snow

All my junk and gunk has been buried in the grave, and I have been washed and cleansed, and made white as snow.

Good Conscience / Don't be Haunted

Verse 21- the answer of a good conscience toward God: a good conscience, catch that believer, especially when you are suffering or doing poorly, you are free, your mind does not have to be haunted by your failings.

Back to Text / Flesh - Satan - Now World / God's Promise

Now, back to our context and theme on suffering. The flesh is conquered on the cross, Satan and your henchman get a good look at these holes for you are through, and now remember the flood of Noah. It is a picture of baptism, washing you white as snow, and it is a picture of a Promise of God - that God knows how to deliver His people in troubled days.

God Prepared Noah for trouble Ahead / So Too for Us - Waves of World / Rise Above It

God prepared Noah for the troubled times ahead, and when the waters came upon the world, Noah raised up above the calamity and destruction that came, preserved and safe. So too it is when the waves of the world come against us, when destruction look imminent, God provides a way for us to rise above it, to escape being drowned out by the world. The ark is a picture of Jesus Christ, our salvation, the Perfection in Suffering.

Ark Rested / Forgiven - Forgotten / Fear Set-In

The ark rested:

(Genesis 8:4 NKJV) Then the ark rested in the seventh month, the seventeenth day of the month, on the mountains of Ararat.

So too can we rest, for the waves of the world can't touch us, for we rest in Christ. Listen gang, baptism is God saying to you, I have forgiven and forgotten your sins, so can you, so should you. And when suffering comes, you have to embrace these things, believe these things are true. If you do not, fear will set in:

(2 Timothy 1:7 NKJV) For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind.

Fear Will Rob You

Fear will rob you of your peace and sound mind, and that will cause your suffering to be compounded and overwhelming.

Conclusion

How Apply / So Few Will Do It / Go to Quiet Place - Put Everything On-Hold / BE STILL

How do I do these things? Here is the simple application, and so, so few people will do it; when that news comes, whatever that thing is that brings or causes suffering, believer you must go to that quiet place, and sit there until you hear from the Father. You can not try to squeeze it in five minutes before you leave for work, you can't do it in the car on the way to work, you have to put everything on-hold, and sit at His feet and be still.

Old Preacher – Young Man

I remind you of the story from the last study, but now think about again with the application of this study. Not long ago I heard a story about a young man and an old preacher. The young man had lost his job and didn't know which way to turn. So he went to see the old preacher. Pacing about the preacher's study, the young man ranted about his problem. Finally he clenched his fist and shouted, "I've begged God to say something to help me. Tell me, Preacher, why doesn't God answer?" The old preacher, who sat across the room, spoke something in reply--something so hushed it was indistinguishable. The young man stepped across the room. "What did you say?" he asked. The preacher repeated himself, but again in a tone as soft as a whisper. So the young man moved closer until he was leaning on the preacher's chair. "Sorry," he said. "I still didn't hear you." With their heads bent together, the old preacher spoke once more. "God sometimes whispers," he said, "so we will move closer to hear Him." This time the young man heard and he understood. We all want God's voice to thunder through the air with the answer to our problem. But God's is the still, small voice, the gentle whisper. Perhaps there's a reason. Nothing draws human focus quite like a whisper. God's whisper means I must stop my ranting and move close to Him, until my head is bent together with His. And then, as I listen, I will find my answer. Better still, I find myself closer to God. (Author Unknown)

Too Many Christians - Get Up TOO Soon

I tell you a problem for Christians, too many Christians, get up too soon. We can watch a two hour movie, but would never consider being still before the Lord for two hours, waiting to hear from Him:

(Jeremiah 29:11 NKJV) For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, says the LORD, thoughts of peace and not of evil, to give you a future and a hope.

(Jeremiah 29:12 NKJV) Then you will call upon Me and go and pray to Me, and I will listen to you.

(Jeremiah 29:13 NKJV) And you will seek Me and find Me, when you search for Me with all your heart.

You will find Me, when you search for me with all of your heart.

Sit & Wait / Talk about Past Studies / Lord Will Calm Your Heart / Attitude of Will Change

Sit and wait to hear from the Lord. Wake-up early, call-in to the boss, set that time aside in the storm to get your heart settled. Talk these past studies over with the Lord, Attitude and Altitude, remember the Perfect Suffering, and that the flesh, Satan, and the world has been dealt with. Talk to the Lord about these things, let Him minister to you and remind you and encourage you in these things, and the Lord will calm your heart and bring you into a place of peace. Your attitude about your suffering will change as He lifts you up into His altitude, and you see the Perfection in Suffering.

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, "feeding His sheep".

The Dispersed / Nero

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission of the Flesh - Principles of Fasting (2:11)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unites these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- Strengthen – to make one strong;
- Settle – to lay a foundation.

Last Studies

The Outline for The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

- Attitude – How we look at Suffering – 1 Peter 3:8-14
- Altitude – Where we look during Suffering – 1 Peter 3:14-17

Outline for "The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness" - (3:18- 22)

- The Flesh Dealt With: 1 Peter 3:18
- Satan & his Henchman Dealt With: 1 Peter 3: 19-20
- The World Dealt With: 1 Peter 3: 21-22

Theme Suffering / Light of Jesus Return / Remaining Time is Short

Here in chapter 4 we continue with the theme of suffering, but it is also going to be put in the light of Jesus soon return, that we are living in the Last Days, are remaining time is short here, in fact by the end of this study it will be 30 more minutes shorter.

Nicaraguan Time

When we were in Nicaragua, one thing I noticed was that my watch was of little value to me. I also noticed that not everyone had a watch. There was a saying there, you are on "Nicaraguan time". Things just happened at their pace, on their time. "You are in Nicaragua now," "and the first thing you want to do is to put away your watch."

Return to States

In the days that followed, as we ministered in Nicaragua, we learned the wisdom of his words. Unfortunately, when we returned to the States, we found ourselves caught up again in the clockwork prison of deadlines and schedules.

Peter & Time / His Death to Come / The Rest of Our Time

Peter had a great deal to say about time (1 Peter 1:5, 11, 17, 20; 4:2-3, 17; 5:6). Certainly the awareness of his own impending martyrdom and seeing the signs of Nero's soon persecution against the saints, had something to do with this emphasis (John 21:15-19; 2 Peter 1:12ff). If a person really believes in eternity, then he will make the best use of time. If we are convinced that Jesus is coming, then we will want to live prepared lives. Whether Jesus comes first, or death comes first, we want to make "the rest of the time" count for eternity.

5 Attitudes / Rest of Our Time

And we can! Peter described five attitudes that a Christian can cultivate in his lifetime ("the rest of his time") if he desires to make his life all that God wants it to be.

Outline: For the "Rest of Our Time"

- A Militant Attitude toward Sin: 1 Peter 4:1-3
- A Patient Attitude toward the Lost: 1 Peter 4:4-6
- An Expectant Attitude toward Christ's Return: 1 Peter 4:7
- A Fervent Attitude toward the Saints: 1 Peter 4:8-11
- A Right Attitude toward Suffering: 1 Peter 4:12-19

A Militant Attitude toward Sin: 1 Peter 4:1-3

(1 Peter 4:1 NKJV) Therefore, since Christ suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves also with the same mind, for he who has suffered in the flesh has ceased from sin,

(1 Peter 4:2 NKJV) that he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh for the lusts of men, but for the will of God.

(1 Peter 4:3 NKJV) For we have spent enough of our past lifetime in doing the will of the Gentiles; when we walked in lewdness, lusts, drunkenness, revelries, drinking parties, and abominable idolatries.

Picture Solder – Equipment for Battle / Attitudes are Weapons / Outlook determines Outcome

The picture is that of a soldier who puts on his equipment and arms himself for battle. Our attitudes are weapons, and weak or wrong attitudes will lead us to defeat. Outlook determines outcome, and a believer must have the right attitudes if he is to live a right life. We are to have a militant attitude towards sin in our lives, we are at war.

Fancy Restaurant

Ever meet in a fancy restaurant, one of those places where the lights are low, and you need a miner's helmet to find your table. You'll notice that only after a few minutes of looking at the menu, you'll be amazed how easily you can read it. It doesn't take us long to get accustomed to the darkness.

Sermon Sentence / Gradually get Use to Sin / Sin Destroy Rest of Time

There is a sermon in that sentence: It is easy for Christians to get accustomed to sin. Instead of having a militant attitude that hates and opposes it, we gradually get used to sin, sometimes without even realizing it. The one thing that will destroy "the rest of our time" is sin. A believer living in sin is a terrible weapon in the hands of Satan. Peter presented several arguments to convince us to oppose sin in our lives.

How can We Enjoy / The Knife

Verse 1 - Therefore, since Christ suffered for us in the flesh: How can we enjoy that which made Jesus suffer and die on the cross? If a vicious criminal stabbed your child to death, would you preserve that knife in a glass case on your mantle? I doubt it. You would never want to see that knife again.

The Lord Dealt with Sin / Had a Militant Attitude toward Sin

Our Lord came to earth to deal with sin and to conquer it forever.

- He dealt with the ignorance of sin by teaching the truth and by living it before men's eyes.
- He dealt with the consequences of sin by healing and forgiving; and, on the cross,
- He dealt the final deathblow to sin itself.

He was armed, as it were, with a militant attitude toward sin, even though He had great compassion for lost sinners.

Goal is to Cease / Suffered & Pharaoh / Visited Suffering People

Verse 1 - for he who has suffered in the flesh has ceased from sin: Our goal in life is to "cease from sin." We will not reach this goal until we die, or are called home when the Lord returns; but this should not keep us from striving (1 John 2:28-3:9). Peter did not say that suffering of itself would cause a person to stop sinning. Pharaoh in Egypt went through great suffering in the plagues, and yet he sinned even more! I have visited suffering people who cursed God and grew more and more bitter because of their pain.

Suffering plus Jesus – Helps Us / Sin Dealt With – Last Study / Same Attitude as Jesus

Suffering, plus Christ in our lives, can help us have victory over sin. But the central idea here seems to be the same truth taught in Romans 6, remember back to our last study on baptism: We are identified with Christ in His suffering and death, and therefore can have victory over sin. As we yield ourselves to God, and have the same attitude toward sin that Jesus had, we can overcome the old life and manifest the new life.

In Remembrance of Me / Remembrance

Do this in remembrance of Me. Remember the price of sin. God became man, the man became the Lamb, and the Lamb became the worm. Crushed and bruised for our iniquity:

(Luke 22:19 NKJV) And He took bread, gave thanks and broke it, and gave it to them, saying, "This is My body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of Me."

(Luke 22:20 NKJV) Likewise He also took the cup after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in My blood, which is shed for you."

Tough Times Loosens Grip / See the Devastation – Fallen World

When you go through tough times, realize, that suffering loosens sin's grip on us. That is one of the purposes of suffering. When you go through suffering, you no longer give in to the lusts of the flesh; you no longer succumb to sin with the same ease, the same vulnerability you experienced previously. When you see the devastation and destruction that sin has upon this fallen world, your heart will be turned against it. That's what suffering does. That's what trials do. The ugliness of sin is seen when it begins to touch your own life. That is why Peter says, "If you've suffered in the flesh—either due to your own sin or sin by the hands of others—you see the result of sin and realize that rather than being something to wink or chuckle at, sin stinks."

Verse 2 / Mark It / Rest of Your Time / That is all you Have Left / What Do with It?

Verse 2 - that he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh for the lusts of men, but for the will of God. Mark that phrase in your Bibles, and may it ring in your head every day when you first awake, and throughout your whole day – The Rest of Your Time. That is all you have left, is the rest of your time, what are you going to do with it? For starters God wants you to have a militant attitude towards Sin

Verse 3 / The List / Not Legalism – The Word

Then Peter lists the things we are to be militant about, have no mercy, take no prisoners. Do not let it be so amongst you. This isn't legalism, it is the Word of God:

(1 Peter 4:3 NKJV) For we have spent enough of our past lifetime in doing the will of the Gentiles; when we walked in lewdness, lusts, drunkenness, revelries, drinking parties, and abominable idolatries.

A Patient Attitude toward the Lost: 1 Peter 4:4-6

(1 Peter 4:4 NKJV) In regard to these, they think it strange that you do not run with them in the same flood of dissipation, speaking evil of you.

(1 Peter 4:5 NKJV) They will give an account to Him who is ready to judge the living and the dead.

(1 Peter 4:6 NKJV) For this reason the gospel was preached also to those who are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.

Some Cults

Verse 6 - For this reason the gospel was preached also to those who are dead: Some cults use this verse to say, "When a person dies, they'll have a second opportunity to accept the gospel." However, taken in context, it's clear Peter is talking about those who suffered to the point of death and are now living in heaven.

Think it Strange / Wreck Life – Sin to Sin / Drunk Sober – Immoral Pure

Verse 4 – they think it strange you do not run with them: Unsaved people do not understand the radical change that their friends experience when they trust Christ and become children of God. They do not think it strange when people wreck their bodies, destroy their homes, and ruin their lives by running from one sin to another! But let a drunkard become sober, or an immoral person pure, and the family thinks he has lost his mind! Festus told Paul, "You are out of your mind!" (Acts 26:24, nasb) and people even thought the same thing of our Lord (Mark 3:21).

They Can Understand That

You see they can't understand them, because they are unregenerate by the Spirit of God. If you think your family member or friend has lost it, then I beseech you to ponder this verse and search your heart and see if maybe it is you, maybe you are blinded:

(1 Corinthians 2:14 NKJV) But the natural man does not receive the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; nor can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

(2 Corinthians 4:3 NKJV) But even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing,

(2 Corinthians 4:4 NKJV) whose minds the god of this age has blinded, who do not believe, lest the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine on them.

Must be Patient / They are Blinded

We must be patient toward the lost, even though we do not agree with their lifestyles or participate in their sins. After all, unsaved people are blind to spiritual truth (2 Cor. 4:3-4) and dead to spiritual enjoyment (Eph. 2:1). In fact, our contact with the lost is important to them since we are the bearers of the truth that they need. When unsaved friends attack us, this is our opportunity to witness to them (1 Peter 3:15).

They will be Judged / Change your Attitude / Revelation 6-19

The unsaved may judge us, but one day, God will judge them. Instead of arguing with them, we should pray for them, knowing that the final judgment is with God. This was the attitude that Jesus took (2:23), and also the Apostle Paul (2 Tim. 2:24-26). Don't worry about your pride, let God change your attitude about the lost and you won't care about your pride, for your heart will break because of the fact that they are not saved from the wrath of God's judgement to come. Read Revelation chapter 6-19 and your heart will break for the wrath they will face, we must have a "Patient Attitude" with the Lost, in hopes that they may repent and give their life to Jesus Christ.

Where do they Go when Suffering

In terms of suffering, where does the unbeliever go in their time of suffering. We have our heavenly Father to call out to, to cling to, to draw strength from, but the unbeliever, I can't imagine what it must be like to endure suffering without God to callout to. We have to have patient attitude with the unsaved, they need our love and comfort.

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

An Expectant Attitude toward Christ's Return: 1 Peter 4:7

(1 Peter 4:7 NKJV) But the end of all things is at hand; therefore be serious and watchful in your prayers.

Soon / Suffering keeps Focus on Eternity / Shift Focus

Verse 7 - But the end of all things is at hand: Time is short, His return is soon, and He is preparing us for it. One way is by the trials and suffering we endure. Suffering keeps us focused on eternity. It's when you're going through tough times, difficult days, seasons of suffering, pressures and persecution that you long for heaven. The good times, the nice things, and the easier days have a tendency to shift our focus off of eternity. It's when the tough times come—when the body hurts, the heart breaks, or the wallet is empty that we say, "I don't belong here. I'm longing for heaven."

They Expected / Not Lazy of Fanatics / 10 Commandments

Christians in the early church expected Jesus to return in their lifetime (Rom. 13:12; 1 John 2:18).

Imagine how much closer we are now 2000 years later. This attitude of expectancy must not turn us into lazy dreamers (2 Thes. 3:6ff) or zealous fanatics. In this chapter, Peter gave "ten commandments" to his readers to keep them in balance as far as the Lord's return was concerned:

- Be sober—v. 7
- Watch unto prayer—v. 7

- Have fervent love—v. 8
- Use hospitality—v. 9
- Minister your spiritual gifts—vv. 10-11
- Think it not strange—v. 12
- Rejoice—v. 13
- Do not be ashamed—vv. 15-16
- Glorify God—vv. 16-18
- Commit yourself to God—v. 19

Be Sober – Steady Clear / Stay Balanced / Setting dates – Naming the Anti-Christ

(1 Peter 4:7 KJV) But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer. KJV, the phrase “be sober” means “be sober-minded, keep your mind steady and clear.” Perhaps a modern equivalent would be “keep cool.” It was a warning against wild thinking about prophecy that could lead to an unbalanced life and ministry. Often we hear of sincere people who go “off balance” because of an unbiblical emphasis on prophecy or a misinterpretation of prophecy. There are people who set dates for Christ’s return, contrary to His warning (Matt. 25:13; see Acts 1:6-8); or they claim to know the name of the beast of Revelation 13.

Problem – Consumed / News- Web / Maggots in Manna

Here is a problem that I see many Christians get sucked into, they get so consumed with prophecy, they spend hours reading the newspapers, cruising the Internet, listening and engaging in prophecy discussions, that they leave little or no time for themselves and the Word. It gets to, I’ll read the word after I check the headlines, but as you know, time evaporates on us, and we are not on Nicaraguan time, and off to work we go. There is saying in the south, “maggots on your Manna”. The children of Israel were told to eat all their manna for the day, and not leave any for tomorrow, those that did would awake to maggots on their manna. The same is true for the Christian and the word, whether it be distractions from searching out prophecy, or just laziness, the word that is not eaten today, is of no use for when tomorrow comes.

Rest of Time – Live in Light / Watch – Alert / Peter Slept

If you want to make the best use of “the rest of your time,” live in the light of the return of Jesus Christ. If we are sober-minded, we will “watch unto prayer.” The word “watch” carries with it the idea of alertness and self-control. This admonition had special meaning to Peter, because he went to sleep when he should have been “watching unto prayer” (Mark 14:37-40).

A Fervent Attitude toward the Saints:1 Peter 4:8-11

(1 Peter 4:8 NKJV) And above all things have fervent love for one another, for "love will cover a multitude of sins."

(1 Peter 4:9 NKJV) Be hospitable to one another without grumbling.

(1 Peter 4:10 NKJV) As each one has received a gift, minister it to one another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

(1 Peter 4:11 NKJV) If anyone speaks, let him speak as the oracles of God. If anyone ministers, let him do it as with the ability which God supplies, that in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom belong the glory and the dominion forever and ever. Amen.

Suffering Frees us to Minister / They were Scattered / Time absorbed in Stuff

Here is a beauty of suffering, suffering frees us to participate in ministry. With persecution heightening, no doubt Peter’s readers had already begun to scatter. Some would leave everything to hide in catacombs. Others would open their homes to those fleeing persecution. All would be called to love one another fervently, especially in those dark days of difficulty. So much of my time is absorbed with “stuff.” When my material, emotional, or relational “stuff” is taken away, I find I am free to share with and care for others in ways I never had previously.

Above all Things / In Light of His Return / Jewish Kabutz

If we really look for the return of Christ, then we shall think of others and properly relate to them. Love for the saints is important, "above [before] all things." Love is the badge of a believer in this world (John 13:34-35). Especially in times of testing and persecution, Christians need to love one another and be united in heart. God gave me this verse when I was in Israel in 1996, as I watched a group of Messianic Jews at a "kabutz". These people were outcasts in the Jewish community for their belief in Jesus; they lived on a farm/commune if you will, and grew all their own food, and then they served Christians tourist family style dinners, that were followed by festive song and dance. It was Jewish culture brought to life by the Spirit of God, it was tremendous. As I sat there, I had never saw such love in a group of believers in my life, and God said let that be your verse when you plant a church someday:

(John 13:33 NKJV) "Little children, I shall be with you a little while longer. You will seek Me; and as I said to the Jews, 'Where I am going, you cannot come,' so now I say to you.

(John 13:34 NKJV) "A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another.

(John 13:35 NKJV) "By this all will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another."

Fervent Love – Athlete Straining for Goal / Eagerness & Intensity

This love should be "fervent." The word pictures an athlete straining to reach the goal. It speaks of eagerness and intensity. Christian love is something we have to work at, just the way an athlete works on his skills. It is not a matter of emotional feeling, though that is included, but of dedicated will. Christian love means that we treat others the way God treats us, obeying His commandments in the Word. It is even possible to love people that we do not like!

Love Covers Sin /

Verse 8 - for "love will cover a multitude of sins: Christian love is forgiving. Peter quoted from Proverbs 10:12—"Hatred stirreth up strifes: but love covereth all sins." This verse is alluded to in James 5:20 and 1 Corinthians 13:4 and 7. Love does not condone sin; for, if we love somebody, we will be grieved to see him sin and hurt himself and others. Rather, love covers sin in that love motivates us to hide the sin from others and not spread it abroad. Where there is hatred, there is malice; and malice causes a person to want to tear down the reputation of his enemy. This leads to gossip and slander (Prov. 11:13; 17:9; see 1 Peter 2:1). Sometimes we try to make our gossip sound "spiritual" by telling people things "so they might pray more intelligently."

No one can hide his sins from God, but believers ought to try, in love, to cover each other's sins at least from the eyes of the unsaved. After all, if the unsaved crowd finds ammunition for persecuting us because of our good words and works (1 Peter 2:19-20; 3:14), what would they do if they knew the bad things that Christians say and do!

Genesis 9:18-27 gives us a beautiful illustration of this principle. Noah got drunk and shamefully uncovered himself. His son Ham saw his father's shame and told the matter to the family. In loving concern, Ham's two brothers covered their father and his shame. It should not be too difficult for us to cover the sins of others; after all, Jesus Christ died that our sins might be washed away.

It is Hospitable / Holidays

Verse 9 - Be hospitable to one another without grumbling: Our Christian love should not only be fervent and forgiving, but it should also be practical. We should share our homes with others in generous (and uncomplaining) hospitality, and we should use our spiritual gifts in ministry to one another. In New Testament times hospitality was an important thing, because there were few inns and poor Christians could not afford to stay at them anyway. Persecuted saints in particular would need places to stay where they could be assisted and encouraged. On that note, never let anyone, especially your fellow believers to spend a holiday alone. I have to remember, when I was a young single Christian how I was always invited over someone's house to help them move, but how many Thanksgivings and Easters I spent alone.

Hospitality is a virtue that is commanded and commended throughout the Scriptures. Moses included it in the Law (Ex. 22:21; Deut. 14:28-29). Jesus enjoyed hospitality when He was on earth, and so did the Apostles in their ministry (Acts 28:7; Phile. 22). Human hospitality is a reflection of God's hospitality to us (Luke 14:16ff). Christian leaders in particular should be "given to hospitality" (1 Tim. 3:2; Titus 1:8).

Abraham was hospitable to three strangers, and discovered that he had entertained the Lord and two angels (Gen. 18; Heb. 13:2). We help to promote the truth when we open our homes to God's servants (3 John 5-8). In fact, when we share with others, we share with Christ (Matt. 25:35, 43). We should not open our homes to others just so that others will invite us over (Luke 14:12-14). We should do it to glorify the Lord.

Each have a Gift / Used for Serving

Verse 10 - As each one has received a gift, minister it to one another: Finally, Christian love must result in service. Each Christian has **at least one spiritual gift** that he must use to the glory of God and the building up of the church (see Rom. 12:1-13; 1 Cor. 12; Eph. 4:1-16). We are stewards. God has entrusted these gifts to us that we might use them for the good of His church. He even gives us the spiritual ability to develop our gifts and be faithful servants of the church.

There are speaking gifts and there are serving gifts, and both are important to the church. Not everybody is a teacher or preacher, though all can be witnesses for Christ. There are those "behind-the-scenes" ministries that help to make the public ministries possible. God gives us the gifts, the abilities, and the opportunities to use the gifts, and He alone must get the glory.

Oracles of God / Acts 17:11

Verse 11 - If anyone speaks, let him speak as the oracles of God: The phrase "oracles of God" in 1 Peter 4:11 does not suggest that everything a preacher or teacher says today is God's truth, because human speakers are fallible. Whoever shares God's Word must be careful about what he says and how he says it, and all must conform to the written Word of God. It is vital that every one of you be "good Bereans", go and search the Scriptures and make sure the teacher is right:

(Acts 17:11 NKJV) These were more fair-minded than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness, and searched the Scriptures daily to find out whether these things were so.

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

A Right Attitude toward Suffering: 1 Peter 4:12-19

(1 Peter 4:12 NKJV) Beloved, do not think it strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened to you;

Sums Up Last few Studies

Peter sums up what we have been talking about for the last few studies; suffering are going to come, accept that and you can deal with them. Question suffering, ask why me, why this, why now, think somehow Christians would be immune from suffering, and you will suffer worse in your suffering. Peter says don't think it strange here in verse 12, and notice, verse 19, that it is the will of God:

(1 Peter 4:19 NKJV) Therefore let those who suffer according to the will of God commit their souls to Him in doing good, as to a faithful Creator.

Last Studies

Remember the past studies:

The Outline for The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

- Attitude – How we look at Suffering – 1 Peter 3:8-14
- Altitude – Where we look during Suffering – 1 Peter 3:14-17

Outline for "The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness" - (3:18- 22)

- The Flesh Dealt With: 1 Peter 3:18
- Satan & his Henchman Dealt With: 1 Peter 3: 19-20
- The World Dealt With: 1 Peter 3: 21-22

(1 Peter 4:13 NKJV) but rejoice to the extent that you partake of Christ's sufferings, that when His glory is revealed, you may also be glad with exceeding joy.

(1 Peter 4:14 NKJV) If you are reproached for the name of Christ, blessed are you, for the Spirit of glory and of God rests upon you. On their part He is blasphemed, but on your part He is glorified.

Not Replace – But Transform / Birth of Baby / Paul – Thorn / Jesus & Cross

It is necessary to understand that God is not going to replace suffering with glory; rather He will transform suffering into glory. Jesus used the illustration of a woman giving birth (John 16:20-22). The same baby that gave her pain also gave her joy. The pain was transformed into joy by the birth of the baby. The thorn in the flesh that gave Paul difficulty also gave him power and glory (2 Cor. 12:7-10). The cross that gave Jesus shame and pain also brought power and glory.

(1 Peter 4:15 NKJV) But let none of you suffer as a murderer, a thief, an evildoer, or as a busybody in other people's matters.

(1 Peter 4:16 NKJV) Yet if anyone suffers as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorify God in this matter.

Word Christian – 3 Times / Badge of Honor

The word “Christian” is found only three times in the entire New Testament (1 Peter 4:16; Acts 11:26; 26:28). The name was originally given by the enemies of the church as a term of reproach; but in time, it became an honored name. Of course, in today’s world, the word “Christian” means to most people the opposite of “pagan.” But the word carries the idea of “a Christ one, belonging to Christ.” Certainly it is a privilege to bear the name and to suffer for His name’s sake (Acts 5:41). To be called a Christian is an honor, a badge of honor, wear it proudly.

(1 Peter 4:17 NKJV) For the time has come for judgment to begin at the house of God; and if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those who do not obey the gospel of God?

(1 Peter 4:18 NKJV) Now "If the righteous one is scarcely saved, Where will the ungodly and the sinner appear?"

We are Saved – Barely / How Sad for the Unsaved

Note the words that Peter used to describe the lost: “Them that obey not the Gospel ... the ungodly and the sinner.” The argument of this verse is clear: If God sends a “fiery trial” to His own children, and they are saved “with difficulty,” what will happen to lost sinners when God’s fiery judgment falls?

(1 Peter 4:19 NKJV) Therefore let those who suffer according to the will of God commit their souls to Him in doing good, as to a faithful Creator.

Creator / He Meets the Needs – Protects Them / Sets the Attitude – On the Throne

Why did Peter refer to God as “a faithful Creator” rather than “a faithful Judge” or even “a faithful Saviour”? Because God the Creator meets the needs of His people (Matt. 6:24-34). It is the Creator who provides food and clothing to persecuted Christians, and who protects them in times of danger. When the early church was persecuted, they met together for prayer and addressed the Lord as the “God, which has made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is” (Acts 4:24). They prayed to the Creator!

Our Heavenly Father is “the Lord of heaven and earth” (Matt. 11:25). With that kind of a Father, we have no need to worry! He is the faithful Creator, and His faithfulness will not fail. Looking to Him as Creator, sets our attitude right, He is on the Throne – Amen!

Outline: For the “Rest of Our Time”

- A Militant Attitude toward Sin: 1 Peter 4:1-3
- A Patient Attitude toward the Lost: 1 Peter 4:4-6
- An Expectant Attitude toward Christ’s Return: 1 Peter 4:7
- A Fervent Attitude toward the Saints: 1 Peter 4:8-11
- A Right Attitude toward Suffering: 1 Peter 4:12-19

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

Peter's Credentials / Still Feeding

Written by the Apostle Peter, whose credentials have been challenged because of his lack of education and training; but Peter walked with the Lord, the second Apostle called, and all could see that his power and boldness came because he had been with the Lord. For 3 years he walked with Jesus step-by-step, and now it is 30 years since the resurrection and Peter is still faithfully doing what the Lord commissioned him to do, *"feeding His sheep"*.

The Dispersed / Nero

He is writing to the Believers that have been spread out, dispersed from their homeland, thrown into foreign countries. Many of them are struggling and suffering; but their greatest struggle is yet to come, for in just several months Roman Empire Nero is going to launch an all-out attack and persecution against Christians, and over the next 2 centuries over 6 million Christians will die for their faith.

Why Peter Writes / Remember

Peter tells us in the Second Epistle why he writes to them (and us), to stir us up, to remind us, that we hang on to the things we have been taught in the Old Testament, the Epistles of the Apostles, and the teachings in the Gospels. He says remember these things, hold on to them, no matter how hard life may get.

(2 Peter 3:1 NKJV) Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), (2 Peter 3:2 NKJV) that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior,

Doctrine – Duty – Declaration

Peter pretty much breaks this letter into 3 areas. Doctrine, Duty, and Declaration; this book takes on the frame work of Ephesians, except Peter adds on the Declaration – The Lord is Returning – Remember that! Doctrine, what we believe and why. Duty, doctrine in action, living it out. Declaration, soon and very soon we are going to see the King, Hold-fast until then.

Doctrine: Remember Our Great Salvation (1:2 - 2:10)

The Certainty of Our Salvation (1:1 - 1:12)

The Calling with Our Salvation (1:13 - 2:3)

The Chosen of Salvation (2:4 - 10)

Duty: Remember Our Example Before Men (2:11 - 4:6)

Honorable Living Before Unbelievers (2:11 - 3:7)

Submission of the Flesh - Principles of Fasting (2:11)

Submission to the Government (2:11-17)

Submission to Masters (2:18 - 25)

Submission in the Family (3:1- 7)

Honorable Living Before Believers (3:8 - 12)

Submission to One Another (3:8 - 12)

Honorable Living in the Midst of Suffering (3:13 - 4:6)

The Principle of Suffering for Righteousness (3:13 - 17)

The Perfection of Suffering for Righteousness (3:18- 22)

The Purpose of Suffering for Righteousness (4:1 - 6)

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Responsibility of Christian Living (4:7 - 11)

The Rewards of Christian Suffering (4:12 - 19)

The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Theme

He tells us to remember because of the theme of this book. The theme of this book is given to us in chapter 5:

*(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all **grace**, who called us to His eternal **glory** by Christ Jesus, after you have **suffered** a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.*

The word suffering is used 16 times, glory 12, and grace 8. Peter unites these 3 words to write a letter of encouragement to those who are struggling and suffering, that their suffering will one day be transformed into glory.

Perfect / Establish / Strengthen / Settled

He writes to us so that we may be:

- Perfect - (mature) which means to mend (what has been broken or rent), to repair, to complete, to fit out, equip, put in order, arrange, adjust, to fit or frame for one's self, prepare;
- Established – to set fast, confirm one's mind;
- Strengthen – to make one strong;
- Settle – to lay a foundation.

End – Judgement / House in Order / Leaders need to Lead/ We All Leaders / Difficult Days Ahead

The end of all things is near (1 Peter 4:7), and judgment begins at the house of God first (1 Peter 4:17); therefore the house of God has to be in order. In this study we will see then that the leadership in the house of God needs to lead, and the house of God is here in this church and there in your homes. We are all leaders in some way or another, whether it be Parents over Children, Pastor/Congregation, Sunday School Teacher/Students, most everyone leads in some form or fashion in their lives. These verses are applicable to all, and Peter calls for this structure and leadership because difficult days were upon these people, and it still continues today, the church is and will continue to be under attack until the return of Christ.

Outline for Chapter 5:

- The Requirements for Christian Leadership (5:1 - 4)
- The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

Verse 10 / God of All Grace / Peter's Life Proof

Then in verse 10, Peter will say the God of all grace, for Peter knew grace, and imbedded in these verses here in chapter 5, is Peter's life of grace, and God's proof to us that the same grace is available to us. We will look at that when we get there, but first, order in the house of God.

(1 Peter 5:1 NKJV) The elders who are among you I exhort, I who am a fellow elder and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that will be revealed:

(1 Peter 5:2 NKJV) Shepherd the flock of God which is among you, serving as overseers, not by compulsion but willingly, not for dishonest gain but eagerly;

(1 Peter 5:3 NKJV) nor as being lords over those entrusted to you, but being examples to the flock;

(1 Peter 5:4 NKJV) and when the Chief Shepherd appears, you will receive the crown of glory that does not fade away.

Interchangeable in NT

Elder, Pastor, Bishop, you will see used interchangeably throughout the NT, so it is important that we understand their meaning:

Elder / Describes Man / Spiritually Mature

Elder (presbuteros): describes the man; he is spiritually mature, and has experience/history in the things of God.

Bishop / Describes Ministry / Oversees – Not Lording / Cares for People / Titles

Bishop (episkopos): describes the ministry. He is an overseer. He oversees but he doesn't overburden or lord over people. A bishop is someone who looks out for the flock. He isn't just concerned with himself, but has heart to see that everyone in the church body is and does do well. To be a bishop, you have to be an elder, you have to be spiritually mature in the things of God. Every church needs people like this, bit male and female. The problem we have today is people want the title, without the entitlement. We see many churches rush to give titles because their organization chart says they need this many bishops, and this many elders. I have seen it too many times, a title destroying a person, they seem to forget they too are sinners saved by grace. The way I see it through the Scriptures, people are these things, they are doing these things, so it then just becomes man recognizing what God has already done in that person's life.

Pastor / Method / To Feed – Nourish / Sheep Reproduce / Shepherd Equips the Saints

Pastor (Shepherd): describes the method. The root of the word shepherd is to feed, and that is the vital role of a Pastor, to nourish the flock of God with God's Word. Healthy sheep will reproduce. The Shepherd doesn't produce sheep, he feeds and nourishes them, and then the healthy sheep reproduce. The Shepherd quips the Sheep:

(Ephesians 4:11 NKJV) And He Himself gave some to be apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, and some pastors and teachers,

(Ephesians 4:12 NKJV) for the equipping of the saints for the work of ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ,

Emphasis on Word / Faith & Word

We put such an emphasis on the studying of the Word because as we grow in the Word, then we grow in the faith, and it will just be natural to share our faith:

(Romans 10:17 NKJV) So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

Push Ministry Down

You see, with these three people, ministry is pushed down, because people are raised up. That is the way it is suppose to be:

(2 Timothy 2:2 NKJV) And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also.

Everyone has a Gift / The Coach / Everybody Serves

We saw in 1 Peter 4:10 that everyone has a spiritual gift, and it meant to be used to minister to one another. I believe strongly that is a role of Pastor, almost like a coach, to make sure that people's gifts are being used, because ministry causes people to grow, for they will need to be in the word and seeking the Lord in prayer. Our ministry philosophy here is that "Everybody Serves".

Peter talks to Elders – Applies to All of Us

So Peter is going to say elders Shepherd the flock of God. If you are a parent, these words apply to you, these words apply to anyone who works with others. So we see we are all elders in some way or another.

(1 Peter 5:2 NKJV) Shepherd the flock of God which is among you, serving as overseers, not by compulsion but willingly, not for dishonest gain but eagerly;

Shepherd – Feed / Mom - Dad

Shepherd the flock, feed the flock of God. Leaders in the home (mom and dad), you need to feed your family; notice there, "which is among you."

Tough One Leaders – Among & Over / Unrelatable – One of Gang

Here is a tough one, notice leaders you are among them, but to be over them. Whether in the ministry or a parent, you need to be among them, but still lead in authority. If you only oversee then you become unrelatable and unapproachable. On the other hand if you are just one of the gang, always cutting up, then authority is lost or greatly diminished.

Tough for Parents / Lose Respect – Overbearing / Split Families – Good Time – Satan’s Lie

Especially tough for parents we want to be buddies with our kids but we can't be so much so that they don't respect our authority. Yet we can't be so much about leading them that we become overbearing. Split families, it is ever so hard on you especially if the ex-spouse gets to be good time Charley or Good time Charlene. You feel the pressure that they get to have all the fun and then you have to all the discipline and development. Don't listen to Satan's whispers, that's all you do is correct, they like the other better. Then the tendency is to let things go that really are detrimental to your child. Your kids need a leader, they can play with their classmates, but those classmates cannot lead them deeper in the Lord, but you can. It is a balance, but God gives us the how to, verse 3:

(1 Peter 5:3 NKJV) nor as being lords over those entrusted to you, but being examples to the flock;

Be Examples / Dictator – Leader / Go – Lets Go / Be Involved

Be examples, this is the answer to the tension of being among the people, yet being over them. Don't be a dictator, but a leader, which is a big difference. A dictator says go, but a leader says "lets go", follow me, follow my example. A leader is involved in whatever he is trying to teach or get done. To teach grace you have to be gracious, to teach love you have to love. Here is a good one for us parents, if your kids grow up to be exactly like you, would that be a good thing. Would they work hard, be dependable, care about others, serve others, be in the Word, a person of prayer.

(1 Peter 5:4 NKJV) and when the Chief Shepherd appears, you will receive the crown of glory that does not fade away.

Verse 2 / 2 Reasons / Forced – Gain / God Looking Out for Us / Ministry on the Heart

Back in verse 2 we saw two reasons not to be in a ministry. Your heart is not in it and you feel quilted or forced into that ministry (Children's Church excluded - just kidding). And for dishonest gain; some people get rich off the ministry, but I think more applicable for us today is that people get into various ministries for respect and recognition. God isn't being harsh here, He is actually being totally loving, He is saying if you are expecting to be appreciated and recognized, at some point you will be disappointed and then frustrated. We do ministry, because God has put the desire in our heart, and when ministry is difficult, we keep going because I am serving you and you are my reward Lord.

Children's Ministry / Crowns

Let me tell all of you serving in the Children's Church, Youth Ministry, you have no idea the Crowns awaiting you. Jesus says let the children come to Me, Jesus loves the children:

(Mark 10:14 NKJV) But when Jesus saw it, He was greatly displeased and said to them, "Let the little children come to Me, and do not forbid them; for of such is the kingdom of God.

Children / Planting Seeds

Jesus loves the little ones, and you have no idea the seeds you are planting within these children. We often think it is that one day it clicks, and boom someone gets saved, but we know the what the Word says:

(1 Corinthians 3:6 NKJV) I planted, Apollos watered, but God gave the increase.

(1 Corinthians 3:7 NKJV) So then neither he who plants is anything, nor he who waters, but God who gives the increase.

(1 Corinthians 3:8 NKJV) Now he who plants and he who waters are one, and each one will receive his own reward according to his own labor.

(1 Corinthians 3:9 NKJV) For we are God's fellow workers; you are God's field, you are God's building.

Every Kid / Billy Graham – Pastor / Chief Shepherd Sees

Every kid that gives their life to the Lord, God accounts their salvation to your account. Not just to Billy Graham's because they went forward at a Crusade, not just to the Pastor who prayed with them, but to yours, for you were mightily used by God whether you realized it or not. The Chief Shepherd sees them all.

The Rest of Our Time

As we studied last week, we only have "the Rest of Our Time" what are you doing with it.

Declaration: Remember Our Lord Will Return (4:7 - 5:14)

The Realization of Christian Victory (5:5 - 14)

(1 Peter 5:5 NKJV) Likewise you younger people, submit yourselves to your elders. Yes, all of you be submissive to one another, and be clothed with humility, for "God resists the proud, But gives grace to the humble."

(1 Peter 5:6 NKJV) Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time,

Addressed to Younger / Humble / Allow Parents to Make Mistake

Addressed to the younger, submit to your elders, and be clothed with humility. Humility means to be humble. So even if your elder, say your parent, is making your life miserable, you are still called to submit; you see humility is allowing them to make mistakes, yet you give them grace.

God will Exalt You

God says submit now, and I will exalt you in due time. If you submit, humble yourself, don't worry because whatever comes your way I will take care of you.

Clothe – Apron – Servant / Kids to Serve / Opposite World / Jesus Served / Parents don't Rob

This word clothe is the verb form of the noun word for "apron". The apron that servants wore in the days of this writing. You see youth, kids, teens, you are called to be clothed with humility, yes put your apron on and serve your elders - your parents. It is so opposite of the world, and truly every family that I know, but the kids are to serve the parents also, not just the parents serving the kids. Jesus put the servant's apron on, and he washed feet. He refreshed the people, he cleaned up after them, he served them. He served them after He had a long hard day Himself. Kids, just because you are kids, doesn't mean that you are not old enough to serve, and parents don't rob your kids of serving by doing everything for them.

(John 13:3 NKJV) Jesus, knowing that the Father had given all things into His hands, and that He had come from God and was going to God,

(John 13:4 NKJV) rose from supper and laid aside His garments, took a towel and girded Himself.

(John 13:5 NKJV) After that, He poured water into a basin and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel with which He was girded.

(1 Peter 5:7 NKJV) casting all your care upon Him, for He cares for you.

(1 Peter 5:8 NKJV) Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour.

Suffering & Satan Comes / Cast on Jesus / Satan Dealt With

When the suffering comes, the attacks from the evil one, cast all your cares upon Jesus. As we have studied, Satan and his henchman have been dealt with:

(1 John 4:4 NKJV) You are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because He who is in you is greater than he who is in the world.

Notice he Roars- Doesn't Claw, Chew / Zondervan

He roars, do you notice that, he roars he doesn't claw you, chew you, because he cannot touch you. Remember back to a couple studies ago, Satan and his henchmen have been dealt with. I like what Zondervan Encyclopedia says, "Although there are occasional incidents in which humans are killed by lions, such events are unusual, and are often provoked by the victims..." So too it is with Satan.

Satan's Goal / Devour

We see in this verse Satan's goal for you; To Devour, which means - to *drink down*, that is, *gulp entire*

Relation to Us / Adversary

His relationship to us, Our Adversary, which means - an *opponent* (in a lawsuit). Which means he automatically loses because our Father is the Judge, and our defense team is His Son.

2 Things – Sober & Vigilant

And then we are given 2 things we are to do ourselves, be sober, and be vigilant. Be sober, meaning not to be drunk, which applies to don't be drinking in the things of the world you can't see him coming, but rather be vigilant, which means to be wake and watch. Christian, Satan is vigilant about you, he is always waiting and watching for an opportunity to strike you. We need always remember that, there is no day off for the Christian.

(1 Peter 5:9 NKJV) Resist him, steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same sufferings are experienced by your brotherhood in the world.

Steadfast / Back to the Word / Battle in the Mind

Verse 9 - steadfast in the faith: back to the Word, for Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the Word of God. The battle in your mind must be combated by faith, and our faith is on the solid Word of God.

(1 Peter 5:10 NKJV) But may the God of all grace, who called us to His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after you have suffered a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.

(1 Peter 5:11 NKJV) To Him be the glory and the dominion forever and ever. Amen.

Theme

The theme of this book.

Grace – Definition / Peter Understands Grace / 9 Verse Biography / Our Promise

God of all grace; Grace, God's Riches At Christ's Expense. Grace, the theological definition, Unmerited, unearned favor on the infinitely ill deserving. Peter says the God of all grace, because Peter understands grace. We can read these 9 verses here in chapter 5 and see a biography of God's grace in Peter's life, and God's grace that is promised to us, no matter how we have blown it in the past.

Verse 1 / Witness of Suffering / Fire - Cross

Verse 1 - I who am a fellow elder and a witness of the sufferings of Christ: Peter said he witnessed the suffering of Christ, yes he did, but from a distance, next to the fire as he warmed himself, but then cursed them as they said you are one of them (John 18). The cross, the mention of any disciples being there was John, so again it must have been from a distance. Strike the shepherd and they will scatter:

Verse 1 / Partaker of Glory / Matthew 17 / 3 Monuments – Equal Law & Prophets / Quiet

Verse 1 - and also a partaker of the glory that will be revealed: Peter said he saw the glory of God, no doubt referring to the Mount of Transfiguration (Matthew 17). What did Peter say, let's build three monuments here, one for you, Elijah, and Moses. In other words putting Jesus on the same level as the law and the prophets. God spoke from heaven, Peter, hear Him. In other words, quiet, my Son is not on the same level as the law and the prophets.

Verse 2 / Shepherd / Wait in Jerusalem – Out Fishing / Feed my Sheep / You Wrong Place

Verse 2 - Shepherd the flock of God which is among you: Jesus told the disciples He would make them fisher of men. He trained them for three years to carry this good news to the lost and dying after His departure, He told Peter to leave his nets and follow me, for I will make you fisher of men (Matthew 4). Where do we find Peter, fishing up in Galilee. Jesus meets Peter there and tells him, Feed my People, as we had studied, Shepherd my People Peter (John 21). Peter, you can't do that from where you are at, because you are in the wrong place right now, for you are not where I told you to be.

Verse 2 / Without Compulsion / Peter Pray

Verse 2 - serving as overseers, not by compulsion but willingly: Peter pray and watch Jesus said to him that night in the garden of Gethsemane, that place Jesus would sweat drops of blood. Jesus agonized, as we know while Peter slept. Jesus gave opportunity to intercede for Him in His most crucial hour, but Peter slept. Jesus would say sleep on, sleep on, for the Spirit is willing but the flesh is weak (Matthew 26):

Verse 3 / Nor Lord Over / Lop Off Malchus Ear

Verse 3- nor as being lords over those entrusted to you, but being examples to the flock; Ahh Peter, good example as you lop off Malchus's ear in the garden that night (John 18).

Verse 5 / Submit to Elders / Suffer & Die / Not so Lord – My Way Better

Verse 5 - Likewise you younger people, submit yourselves to your elders. Jesus said in (Matthew 16) that he will suffer, be killed, and raise again on the third day, but Peter jumps in and says not so Lord. Peter not an example of submission to his elder, his leader. My way is better Lord, and suffering is not part of the plan.

Verse 5 / Clothed with Humility / Don't Wash my Feet

Verse 5 - and be clothed with humility, for "God resists the proud, But gives grace to the humble.": Jesus gives the example of washing the disciples feet, but when he comes to Peter, Peter says not me. Peter is too proud, not humble enough to allow the Lord to wash his feet (John 13).

Verse 7 / Cast all Your Cares / The Waves Raging

Verse 7 - casting all your care upon Him, for He cares for you: The boat was taking in water (Matthew 14), the waves were raging, and Peter said Lord is that is you command me to come to you, Jesus says come, Peter walks on water until he takes his eyes off of Jesus, sees the raging sea around him rather than his Lord's face, and he sinks. So much for casting all your cares upon Him.

Verse 8 / Roaring Lion / Satan desires to Sift You / Cock-a-doodle-doo

Verse 8 - Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour: In (Luke 22) Jesus tells Peter that Satan desires to sift him, but Peter says I'll die if I have to; Lord you don't need to worry about me, its these other guys you need to worry about. Cock-a-doodle-doo. Peter was sifted

Failed at Every Point / Verse 10 – God of All Grace / Peter Used - TEACHABLE

Peter failed at every point, but he says to us in verse 10, the God of ALL GRACE. Peter was mightily used by God, even after all his failings, why, because he was teachable. He took all these failings and sufferings and used them to become **perfect, establish, strengthen, and settled**

Personal Experiences / Learned – Now Teaches / Feeding the Flock of God

Peter really is teaching in this chapter on all his personal experiences of failings, but how he has learned from them, and now can teach others on them. He is feeding the flock of God, he is doing what Jesus called him to do, feed my sheep.

Parents & Kids / Failed Miserably / Hypocrite / IT is Through God's Grace

Parents we can feel we can't speak and teach our kids on subjects we have failed miserably on, that is wrong thinking. Same in the work place or everyday life, we feel everyone knows how I blew it in that area, they will call me a hypocrite; wrong, wrong, wrong, if you have learned from those failings, moved on from them, are not living in them and repeating them, it is through God's grace, like Peter, that we can tell people, let me tell you what works and what doesn't work. I've learned the hard way so hopefully you won't.

Want to Break Heart of God / Be Unteachable / Peter Says I Went to Victorious Life

Do you want to break God's heart, then leave here today unchanged, leave here today unteachable. It is so sad to watch Christians fail in the same area over and over again. Peter says look at my life, look at my failings, but see also how I got up and went on the Victorious Christian living, and how I lead others to that same victory.

Teachable - Useable

If you are teachable, then you will be useable. The God of All Grace....., that is the realization of the Christian Victory. We are free to live, to enjoy fellowship with Him and each other regardless of the circumstances, or our failures. By the God of All Grace we are clean, pure, white as snow and as I realize that in this world that can make us so dirty, I realize how great this Christian Victory is. He is an

Awesome God, and this wonderful epistle, this letter of love to those who are going through it, tells us how much so.

(1 Peter 5:12 NKJV) By Silvanus, our faithful brother as I consider him, I have written to you briefly, exhorting and testifying that this is the true grace of God in which you stand.

(1 Peter 5:13 NKJV) She who is in Babylon, elect together with you, greets you; and so does Mark my son.

(1 Peter 5:14 NKJV) Greet one another with a kiss of love. Peace to you all who are in Christ Jesus. Amen.

Ends with Peace / People Scattered – Suffering – Persecution / Peace in Big Picture

He ends with peace to all of you who are in Christ Jesus. He ends with peace to people who are scattered and going through suffering and persecution, and more intense persecution is coming, yet he says peace. You will have peace when you see the big picture. One day all the struggles and suffering of this world will be transformed into His Glory, not replaced but transformed into glory as we become **perfect, establish, strengthen, and settled.**

Scriptures on Fasting

Old Testament Fasting

Specifically Seeking Direction from the Lord:

(Judges 20:24 NKJV) So the children of Israel approached the children of Benjamin on the second day.

(Judges 20:25 NKJV) And Benjamin went out against them from Gibeah on the second day, and cut down to the ground eighteen thousand more of the children of Israel; all these drew the sword.

(Judges 20:26 NKJV) Then all the children of Israel, that is, all the people, went up and came to the house of God and wept. They sat there before the LORD **and fasted that day until evening**; and they offered burnt offerings and peace offerings before the LORD.

(Judges 20:27 NKJV) So the children of Israel inquired of the LORD (the ark of the covenant of God was there in those days,

(Ezra 8:21 NKJV) Then **I proclaimed a fast** there at the river of Ahava, that we might humble ourselves before our God, to seek from Him the right way for us and our little ones and all our possessions.

For Repentance of Sin

(1 Samuel 7:5 NKJV) And Samuel said, "Gather all Israel to Mizpah, and I will pray to the LORD for you."

(1 Samuel 7:6 NKJV) So they gathered together at Mizpah, drew water, and poured it out before the LORD. And **they fasted that day**, and said there, "We have sinned against the LORD." And Samuel judged the children of Israel at Mizpah.

(Joel 2:12 NKJV) "Now, therefore," says the LORD, "Turn to Me with all your heart, **With fasting**, with weeping, and with mourning."

(Joel 2:13 NKJV) So rend your heart, and not your garments; Return to the LORD your God, For He is gracious and merciful, Slow to anger, and of great kindness; And He relents from doing harm.

(Joel 2:14 NKJV) Who knows if He will turn and relent, And leave a blessing behind Him; A grain offering and a drink offering For the LORD your God?

(Joel 2:15 NKJV) Blow the trumpet in Zion, **Consecrate a fast**, Call a sacred assembly;

For a Time of Mourning

(1 Samuel 31:11 NKJV) Now when the inhabitants of Jabesh Gilead heard what the Philistines had done to Saul,

(1 Samuel 31:12 NKJV) all the valiant men arose and traveled all night, and took the body of Saul and the bodies of his sons from the wall of Beth Shan; and they came to Jabesh and burned them there.

(1 Samuel 31:13 NKJV) Then they took their bones and buried them under the tamarisk tree at Jabesh, **and fasted seven days**.

For Intercession before the Lord on Behalf of Another

(2 Samuel 12:16 NKJV) David therefore pleaded with God for the child, **and David fasted** and went in and lay all night on the ground.

As a Nation for God's Hand to be Upon the Nation & Protection of the Nation

(2 Chronicles 20:2 NKJV) Then some came and told Jehoshaphat, saying, "A great multitude is coming against you from beyond the sea, from Syria; and they are in Hazazon Tamar" (which is En Gedi).

(2 Chronicles 20:3 NKJV) And Jehoshaphat feared, and set himself to seek the LORD, **and proclaimed a fast throughout all Judah**.

(2 Chronicles 20:4 NKJV) So Judah gathered together to ask help from the LORD; and from all the cities of Judah they came to seek the LORD.

For Intercession before the Lord on Behalf of a Nation

(Nehemiah 1:3 NKJV) *And they said to me, "The survivors who are left from the captivity in the province are there in great distress and reproach. The wall of Jerusalem is also broken down, and its gates are burned with fire."*

(Nehemiah 1:4 NKJV) *So it was, when I heard these words, that I sat down and wept, and mourned for many days; **I was fasting and praying before the God of heaven.***

(Nehemiah 1:5 NKJV) *And I said: "I pray, LORD God of heaven, O great and awesome God, You who keep Your covenant and mercy with those who love You and observe Your commandments,*

(Nehemiah 1:6 NKJV) *"please let Your ear be attentive and Your eyes open, that You may hear the prayer of Your servant which I pray before You now, day and night, for the children of Israel Your servants, and confess the sins of the children of Israel which we have sinned against You. Both my father's house and I have sinned.*

(Nehemiah 1:7 NKJV) *"We have acted very corruptly against You, and have not kept the commandments, the statutes, nor the ordinances which You commanded Your servant Moses.*

(Nehemiah 1:8 NKJV) *"Remember, I pray, the word that You commanded Your servant Moses, saying, 'If you are unfaithful, I will scatter you among the nations;*

(Nehemiah 1:9 NKJV) *'but if you return to Me, and keep My commandments and do them, though some of you were cast out to the farthest part of the heavens, yet I will gather them from there, and bring them to the place which I have chosen as a dwelling for My name.'*

(Daniel 9:3 NKJV) *Then I set my face toward the Lord God to make request by prayer and supplications, with fasting, sackcloth, and ashes.*

(Daniel 9:4 NKJV) *And I prayed to the LORD my God, and made confession, and said, "O Lord, great and awesome God, who keeps His covenant and mercy with those who love Him, and with those who keep His commandments,*

(Daniel 9:5 NKJV) *"we have sinned and committed iniquity, we have done wickedly and rebelled, even by departing from Your precepts and Your judgments.*

(Daniel 9:6 NKJV) *"Neither have we heeded Your servants the prophets, who spoke in Your name to our kings and our princes, to our fathers and all the people of the land.*

Fasting as a Nation for Repentance of Sin of the Nation & it's People

(Nehemiah 9:1 NKJV) *Now on the twenty-fourth day of this month the children of Israel were assembled **with fasting**, in sackcloth, and with dust on their heads.*

(Nehemiah 9:2 NKJV) *Then those of Israelite lineage separated themselves from all foreigners; and they stood and confessed their sins and the iniquities of their fathers.*

(Nehemiah 9:3 NKJV) *And they stood up in their place and read from the Book of the Law of the LORD their God for one-fourth of the day; and for another fourth they confessed and worshiped the LORD their God.*

(Jeremiah 36:6 NKJV) *"You go, therefore, and read from the scroll which you have written at my instruction, the words of the LORD, in the hearing of the people in the Lord's house **on the day of fasting**. And you shall also read them in the hearing of all Judah who come from their cities.*

(Jeremiah 36:7 NKJV) *"It may be that they will present their supplication before the LORD, and everyone will turn from his evil way. For great is the anger and the fury that the LORD has pronounced against this people."*

A Group of People Interceding for a Specific Person and/or Leader

(Esther 4:15 NKJV) *Then Esther told them to reply to Mordecai:*

(Esther 4:16 NKJV) *"Go, gather all the Jews who are present in Shushan, **and fast for me**; neither eat nor drink for three days, night or day. My maids and I will fast likewise. And so I will go to the king, which is against the law; and if I perish, I perish!"*

(Esther 4:17 NKJV) *So Mordecai went his way and did according to all that Esther commanded him.*

Beware of Fasting for Religious Sake versus Fasting for Righteousness Sake

(Isaiah 58:1 NKJV) *"Cry aloud, spare not; Lift up your voice like a trumpet; Tell My people their transgression, And the house of Jacob their sins.*

(Isaiah 58:2 NKJV) Yet they seek Me daily, And delight to know My ways, As a nation that did righteousness, And did not forsake the ordinance of their God. They ask of Me the ordinances of justice; They take delight in approaching God.

(Isaiah 58:3 NKJV) **'Why have we fasted,' they say,** 'and You have not seen? Why have we afflicted our souls, and You take no notice?' "In fact, in the day of your fast you find pleasure, And exploit all your laborers.

(Isaiah 58:4 NKJV) Indeed you fast for strife and debate, And to strike with the fist of wickedness. You will not fast as you do this day, To make your voice heard on high.

(Isaiah 58:5 NKJV) Is it a fast that I have chosen, A day for a man to afflict his soul? Is it to bow down his head like a bulrush, And to spread out sackcloth and ashes? Would you call this a fast, And an acceptable day to the LORD?

(Isaiah 58:6 NKJV) "Is this not the fast that I have chosen: To loose the bonds of wickedness, To undo the heavy burdens, To let the oppressed go free, And that you break every yoke?

(Isaiah 58:7 NKJV) Is it not to share your bread with the hungry, And that you bring to your house the poor who are cast out; When you see the naked, that you cover him, And not hide yourself from your own flesh?

(Isaiah 58:8 NKJV) Then your light shall break forth like the morning, Your healing shall spring forth speedily, And your righteousness shall go before you; The glory of the LORD shall be your rear guard.

(Isaiah 58:9 NKJV) Then you shall call, and the LORD will answer; You shall cry, and He will say, 'Here I am.' "If you take away the yoke from your midst, The pointing of the finger, and speaking wickedness,

(Isaiah 58:10 NKJV) If you extend your soul to the hungry And satisfy the afflicted soul, Then your light shall dawn in the darkness, And your darkness shall be as the noonday.

(Isaiah 58:11 NKJV) The LORD will guide you continually, And satisfy your soul in drought, And strengthen your bones; You shall be like a watered garden, And like a spring of water, whose waters do not fail.

(Isaiah 58:12 NKJV) Those from among you Shall build the old waste places; You shall raise up the foundations of many generations; And you shall be called the Repairer of the Breach, The Restorer of Streets to Dwell In.

(Isaiah 58:13 NKJV) "If you turn away your foot from the Sabbath, From doing your pleasure on My holy day, And call the Sabbath a delight, The holy day of the LORD honorable, And shall honor Him, not doing your own ways, Nor finding your own pleasure, Nor speaking your own words,

(Isaiah 58:14 NKJV) Then you shall delight yourself in the LORD; And I will cause you to ride on the high hills of the earth, And feed you with the heritage of Jacob your father. The mouth of the LORD has spoken."

Beware of Fasting with an Unrepentant Heart & Habitual Sin – God will not Hear

(Jeremiah 14:11 NKJV) Then the LORD said to me, "Do not pray for this people, for their good.

(Jeremiah 14:12 NKJV) **"When they fast, I will not hear their cry;** and when they offer burnt offering and grain offering, I will not accept them. But I will consume them by the sword, by the famine, and by the pestilence."

Beware of Fasting as a Ritual & Routine Duty

(Zechariah 7:5 NKJV) "Say to all the people of the land, and to the priests: **'When you fasted and mourned** in the fifth and seventh months during those seventy years, did you really fast for Me; for Me?

(Zechariah 7:6 NKJV) 'When you eat and when you drink, do you not eat and drink for yourselves?

For a Time of Thanksgiving for the Lord's Goodness & Mercy

(Jonah 3:4 NKJV) And Jonah began to enter the city on the first day's walk. Then he cried out and said, "Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown!"

(Jonah 3:5 NKJV) So the people of Nineveh believed God, proclaimed a fast, and put on sackcloth, from the greatest to the least of them.

(Zechariah 8:19 NKJV) "Thus says the LORD of hosts: 'The fast of the fourth month, The fast of the fifth, The fast of the seventh, And the fast of the tenth, Shall be joy and gladness and cheerful feasts For the house of Judah. Therefore love truth and peace.'

New Testament Fasting

The Fasting of Jesus Christ Before He Began His Public Ministry

(Matthew 4:1 NKJV) Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil.

*(Matthew 4:2 NKJV) And **when He had fasted forty days and forty nights**, afterward He was hungry.*

Not If You Fast – But When You Fast – Fasting is Expected of every Believer

*(Matthew 6:2 NKJV) "Therefore, **when you do a charitable deed**, do not sound a trumpet before you as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory from men. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward....."*

*(Matthew 6:5 NKJV) "And **when you pray**, you shall not be like the hypocrites. For they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the corners of the streets, that they may be seen by men. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward....."*

*(Matthew 6:16 NKJV) "Moreover, **when you fast**, do not be like the hypocrites, with a sad countenance. For they disfigure their faces that they may appear to men to be fasting. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward.*

*(Matthew 6:17 NKJV) "But you, **when you fast**, anoint your head and wash your face,*

(Matthew 6:18 NKJV) "so that you do not appear to men to be fasting, but to your Father who is in the secret place; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly.

Beware not to Fast to Impress other People – to appear Spiritual

*(Matthew 6:16 NKJV) "Moreover, **when you fast**, do not be like the hypocrites, with a sad countenance. For they disfigure their faces that they may appear to men to be fasting. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward.*

(Matthew 6:17 NKJV) "But you, when you fast, anoint your head and wash your face,

(Matthew 6:18 NKJV) "so that you do not appear to men to be fasting, but to your Father who is in the secret place; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly.

Jesus Said we are to Fast Until He Returns

(Matthew 9:14 NKJV) Then the disciples of John came to Him, saying, "Why do we and the Pharisees fast often, but Your disciples do not fast?"

*(Matthew 9:15 NKJV) And Jesus said to them, "Can the friends of the bridegroom mourn as long as the bridegroom is with them? But the days will come when the bridegroom will be taken away from them, **and then they will fast.**"*

Fasting for the Power of God in your Life

(Matthew 17:20 NKJV) So Jesus said to them, "Because of your unbelief; for assuredly, I say to you, if you have faith as a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move; and nothing will be impossible for you.

*(Matthew 17:21 NKJV) "However, **this kind does not go out except by prayer and fasting.**"*

Fasting for Salvation of a Nation or Individuals

(Luke 2:34 NKJV) Then Simeon blessed them, and said to Mary His mother, "Behold, this Child is destined for the fall and rising of many in Israel, and for a sign which will be spoken against

(Luke 2:35 NKJV) "(yes, a sword will pierce through your own soul also), that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed."

(Luke 2:36 NKJV) Now there was one, Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher. She was of a great age, and had lived with a husband seven years from her virginity;

*(Luke 2:37 NKJV) and this woman was a widow of about eighty-four years, who did not depart from the temple, **but served God with fastings and prayers night and day.***

(Luke 2:38 NKJV) And coming in that instant she gave thanks to the Lord, and spoke of Him to all those who looked for redemption in Jerusalem.

Beware of Fasting for Religious Sake – It is a Matter of the Heart

(Luke 18:11 NKJV) *"The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, 'God, I thank You that I am not like other men; extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this tax collector.*

(Luke 18:12 NKJV) *'I fast twice a week; I give tithes of all that I possess.'*

(Luke 18:13 NKJV) *"And the tax collector, standing afar off, would not so much as raise his eyes to heaven, but beat his breast, saying, 'God, be merciful to me a sinner!'*

(Luke 18:14 NKJV) *"I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other; for everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted."*

Spiritual Visions & Insights may Come in Times of Fasting

(Acts 10:30 NKJV) So Cornelius said, "Four days ago I was fasting until this hour; and at the ninth hour I prayed in my house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

(Acts 10:31 NKJV) "and said, 'Cornelius, your prayer has been heard, and your alms are remembered in the sight of God.

Spiritual Visions & Insights may Come in Times of Fasting

(Acts 13:1 NKJV) *Now in the church that was at Antioch there were certain prophets and teachers: Barnabas, Simeon who was called Niger, Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen who had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.*

(Acts 13:2 NKJV) *As they ministered to the Lord and fasted, the Holy Spirit said, "Now separate to Me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them."*

(Acts 13:3 NKJV) **Then, having fasted and prayed, and laid hands on them, they sent them away.**

(Acts 13:4 NKJV) *So, being sent out by the Holy Spirit, they went down to Seleucia, and from there they sailed to Cyprus.*

Fasting for the Sending out for Ministry

(Acts 13:2 NKJV) *As they ministered to the Lord **and fasted**, the Holy Spirit said, "Now separate to Me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them."*

(Acts 13:3 NKJV) **Then, having fasted and prayed, and laid hands on them, they sent them away.**

(Acts 13:4 NKJV) *So, being sent out by the Holy Spirit, they went down to Seleucia, and from there they sailed to Cyprus.*

Interceding for Individuals or a Church

(Acts 14:21 NKJV) *And when they had preached the gospel to that city and made many disciples, they returned to Lystra, Iconium, and Antioch,*

(Acts 14:22 NKJV) *strengthening the souls of the disciples, exhorting them to continue in the faith, and saying, "We must through many tribulations enter the kingdom of God."*

(Acts 14:23 NKJV) *So when they had appointed elders in every church, **and prayed with fasting**, they commended them to the Lord in whom they had believed.*

Fasting was Expected – Taught in the Epistles Also

(1 Corinthians 7:4 NKJV) *The wife does not have authority over her own body, but the husband does. And likewise the husband does not have authority over his own body, but the wife does.*

(1 Corinthians 7:5 NKJV) *Do not deprive one another except with consent for a time, **that you may give yourselves to fasting and prayer**; and come together again so that Satan does not tempt you because of your lack of self-control.*

Appreciate Your Blessings – Some are Forced to Fast

(2 Corinthians 6:4 NKJV) *But in all things we commend ourselves as ministers of God: in much patience, in tribulations, in needs, in distresses,*

(2 Corinthians 6:5 NKJV) *in stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labors, in sleeplessness, **in fastings**;*

These pages are printed in their entirety and are unedited, taken from Dr. Bill Bright's Website. His guide often references a 40 day fast, but the principles are applicable for any fast:

<http://www.billbright.com/howtofast/>

Your Personal Guide to Fasting and Prayer

Fasting is the most powerful spiritual discipline of all the Christian disciplines. Through fasting and prayer, the Holy Spirit can transform your life.

Fasting and prayer can also work on a much grander scale. According to Scripture, personal experience and observation, I am convinced that when God's people fast with a proper Biblical motive-seeking God's face not His hand, with a broken, repentant, and contrite spirit, God will hear from heaven and heal our lives, our churches, our communities, our nation and world. Fasting and prayer can bring about revival - a change in the direction of our nation, the nations of earth and the fulfillment of the Great Commission.

The awesome power can be released through you as you fast through the enabling of the Holy Spirit.

Fasting is one of the most neglected spiritual admonitions. In fact, it has been ignored for so long that it is difficult to find information on the "how-to's" of this life-changing experience. When I first undertook an extended fast, I had a difficult time finding information on the nature of a Biblical fast, how to start, what to expect physically and spiritually, and how to terminate a fast.

These pages are designed to answer your practical questions about fasting and ease any concerns you might have. On this web site you will learn: Why you should fast. How to fast safely How long and what type of fast is right for you How to prepare yourself spiritually and physically How to manage your schedule while fasting How to deal with the responses of friends and loved ones How to make your spiritual experience the best it can be How to maintain nutritional balance and health from beginning to end (including specific juice and broth recipes) What physical benefits to expect How to finish your fast and return to your normal schedule in a HEALTHY way

I want to be of help to you so I will be speaking to you from these pages at various points in the study. I have completed five 40-day fasts. I want to share with you what I have learned and what has helped me. Whether you hold a 1-day fast or an extended 40-day fast, I pray that our Lord's most wonderful love and blessings will be poured out on you as you take this exciting step of faith.

Outline:

- [Why You Should Fast](#)
- [How to Fast Safely](#)
- [How Long and What Type of Fast is Right for You](#)
- [How to Prepare Yourself Physically and Spiritually](#)
- [How to Manage Your Schedule While You Fast](#)
- [Dealing with the Response of Family and Friends](#)
- [How to Make Your Spiritual Experience the Best it can Be](#)
- [Maintaining Nutritional Balance](#)
- [What Physical Effects to Expect](#)
- [How to Finish Your Fast](#)
- [7 Steps to Fasting and Prayer](#)

Why You Should Fast

If you do not already know of the power and importance of fasting, here are some very important facts:

- Fasting was an expected discipline in both the Old and New Testament eras. For example, Moses fasted at least two recorded forty-day periods. Jesus fasted 40 days and reminded His followers to fast, "when you fast," not if you fast.
- Fasting and prayer can restore the loss of the "first love" for your Lord and result in a more intimate relationship with Christ.
- Fasting is a biblical way to truly humble yourself in the sight of God (Psalm 35:13; Ezra 8:21). King David said, "I humble myself through fasting."
- Fasting enables the Holy Spirit to reveal your true spiritual condition, resulting in brokenness, repentance, and a transformed life.
- The Holy Spirit will quicken the Word of God in your heart and His truth will become more meaningful to you!
- Fasting can transform your prayer life into a richer and more personal experience.
- Fasting can result in a dynamic personal revival in your own life-and make you a channel of revival to others.
- Fasting and prayer are the only disciplines that fulfill the requirements of II Chronicles 7:14: *"If my people, who are called by my name, will humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn from their wicked ways, then will I hear from heaven and will forgive their sin and will heal their land."*

If you fast, you will find yourself being humbled as I did. You will discover more time to pray and seek God's face. And as He leads you to recognize and repent of unconfessed sin, you will experience special blessings from God.

Through your fast, and that of many other believers, God will heal our land.

How to Fast Safely

As you begin your fast, you may hear from concerned loved ones and friends who urge you to protect your health. And they are right. You should protect your health. [But I assure you, if done properly, fasting will not only prove to be a spiritual blessing, but physical blessing as well.](#)

By all means, consult your doctor before you begin your fast. But, be aware that many doctors have not been trained in this area and so their understanding is limited. Even so, it would be wise to ask your doctor for a physical exam to make sure you are in good health. You may have a physical problem that would make fasting unwise or dangerous. Also, if you are under any type of medication, make sure you talk to your doctor before changing your regime. Prudence and caution are in order.

When you are assured that you are in good health, you are ready to begin your fast. Follow the guidelines in the "Physical Preparations" and "Maintaining Nutritional Balance and Health" parts of this website.

[In spite of the absolute safety and benefits of fasting, there are certain persons who should NEVER fast without professional supervision. For example:](#)

- Persons who are physically too thin or emaciated
- Persons who are prone to anorexia, bulimia, or other behavioral disorders
- Those who suffer weakness or anemia
- Persons who have tumors, bleeding ulcers, cancer, blood diseases, or who have heart disease
- Those who suffer chronic problems with kidneys, liver, lungs, heart, or other important organs
- Individuals who take insulin for diabetes, or suffer any other blood sugar problem such as hyperglycemia
- Women who are pregnant or nursing

How Long and What Type of Fast is Right for You

If you have never fasted before, I applaud your present interest! Fasting has been a major emphasis in the lives of many of the great spiritual leaders throughout history. John Wesley, the founder of the Methodist denomination, fasted every Wednesday and Friday and required all of his clergy to do the same. Effective ministers of God from the apostle Paul to Martin Luther to John Calvin made it a continual part of their walks with God.

None of those men had a "formula fast" that was the only "right" way. Fasting is about the condition of the heart, not the number of days. Each time that I have fasted for forty days, it was because I felt impressed by God to do so.

So, start slowly. Fast for one meal a day, or one day a week, or one week a month. Build up your spiritual muscles so that you will be prepared in a period of several months to fast for an extended 40 day period.

[The Bible recounts primarily two types of fasts.](#) A partial fast is described in the book of Daniel. Although the water fast seemed to be the custom of the prophet, there was a three-week period in which he only abstained from "delicacies," meat, and wine (Daniel 10:3).

The two primary types mentioned in the Bible are the "absolute" and "supernatural absolute" fasts. These are total fasts-no food (solid or liquid) and no water. Paul went on an absolute fast for three days following his encounter with Jesus on the road to Damascus (Acts 9:9). Moses and Elijah engaged in what must be considered a supernatural absolute fast of forty days (Deuteronomy 9:9; 1 Kings 19:8).

So, I strongly advise you to drink plenty of liquids. Obviously, if God leads you to undertake an absolute fast, you should obey. If so, be certain, without doubt, that God is leading you. Water-only fasts that last for more than several days need to be undertaken with complete rest and under medical supervision because of the extreme danger of over-toxification, breakdown of vital body tissues, and loss of electrolytes.

I personally recommend and practice water and juice fasting, especially if you are going to fast for an extended period of time. This type of fast will provide you with more energy than absolute or water-only fasts and still lead you into the humbling experience of denying your desire for solid food that you can chew.

When it comes to making your final decision about what type of fast is right for you, the best advice I can give you is to follow the leading of the Holy Spirit. He will guide your heart and mind as to what is best for you. [Remember, the most important consideration in fasting is your motive. Why are you fasting? To seek something personally from God's hand or to seek His face in worship, praise and thanksgiving?](#)

How to Prepare Yourself Physically and Spiritually

Spiritual and physical preparation is vital in sustaining a fast, no matter how long it may be.

Spiritual Preparation

In preparation for this special time with God, I strongly urge you to examine your heart, and detect any unconfessed sin. Scripture records that God always requires His people to repent of their sins before He will hear their prayers. King David said:

Come and hear, all of you who reverence the Lord, and I will tell you what he did for me: For I cried to him for help, with praises ready on my tongue. He would not have listened if I had not confessed my sins. But he listened! He heard my prayer! He paid attention to it!

Blessed be God who didn't turn away when I was praying, and didn't refuse me his kindness and love. (Psalm 66:16-20)

In your prayers, confess not only obvious sins, but less obvious ones as well. The sins of omission as well as the sins of commission experiences. These may be experiences leaving your first love for our Lord: worldly-mindedness, self-centeredness, spiritual indifference, and unwillingness to share your faith in Christ with others, not spending sufficient time in God's Word and in prayer, a poor relationship with your spouse, your children, your pastor, or other members of your church.

Another great way to prepare for your fast is to practice what I call "Spiritual Breathing." The concept is simple, but it has changed my own life and that of millions of others.

Like physical breathing, Spiritual Breathing is a process of exhaling the impure and inhaling the pure. If you knowingly sin, breathe spiritually to restore the fullness of God's Holy Spirit in your life. You exhale by confessing your sins immediately when you become aware of them, and you inhale by inviting the Holy Spirit to re-take control of your life. As an act of faith, trust Him to empower you. During the fast, spiritual breathing-constant reliance on the Holy Spirit-will enable you to resist temptation, not only to sin but to abandon your fast.

Physical Preparation

Although fasting is primarily a spiritual discipline, it begins in the physical realm. You should not fast without specific physical preparation.

If you plan on fasting for several days, you will find it helpful to begin by eating smaller meals before you abstain altogether. Resist the urge to have that "last big feast" before the fast. Cutting down on your meals a few days before you begin the fast will signal your mind, stomach, and appetite that less food is acceptable.

Some health professionals suggest eating only raw foods for two days before starting a fast. I also recommend weaning yourself off caffeine and sugar products to ease your initial hunger or discomfort at the early stages of your fast

How to Manage Your Schedule While You Fast

How long you fast, the kind of fast you undertake, and how you adjust your work schedule depends mostly on your occupation. Persons with office jobs, pastors, or homemakers may find it easier to continue their duties and fast for longer periods of time. In fact, on the basis of my personal experience, worldwide travels and the many letters, which I have received, I am confident that many, many thousands of pastors and lay men and women have already completed a 40-day fast!

Though there are many who engage in strenuous physical labor and have enjoyed their extended fast, if you are so engaged, you may wish to fast only one or more days of the week, limiting yourselves to partial fasting if you are so engaged. Or you may look to weekends as the prime time to abstain from food. Remember, too, fasting during major holidays is not always a good idea. Families may be inconvenienced, and temptations to eat can be overwhelming.

Reasons for schedule adjustments, especially during an extended fast, are two-fold...

The first is physical. Throughout your fast, you may feel somewhat weaker than normal. During the first few days, you may feel tired and irritable. Lightening your workload and cutting down on strenuous exercise would be a very good idea to maintain your health and your morale.

The second reason is spiritual. Fasting is not just denying yourself food. It is exchanging the needs of the physical body for those of the spiritual. Long times of prayer and reading God's Word will be very essential if you are to enter into a more intimate communion with God to maintain your fast to its completion. While fasting, if you dissipate your energy on numerous errands or busy-work to the neglect of spending special time with God, you will starve both physically and spiritually. You will find yourself becoming discouraged and frustrated with your fast instead of being benefited and uplifted and blessed. I don't want that to happen to you.

The more time you spend with God in fellowship, worship, and adoration of Him, and the more you read and meditate upon His Word, the greater your effectiveness will be in prayer and the more meaningful your fast will be. So I encourage you to arrange your schedule accordingly!

Dealing with the Response of Family and Friends

Many people are reluctant to tell others that they are fasting so they will avoid the sin of the Pharisees: fasting just to gain recognition for themselves. I strongly believe that attitude is a result of a wrong interpretation of our Lord's teaching and that it is a trick of the enemy who does not want us to fast, nor to share with your loved ones, neighbors and friends the benefits of fasting.

By isolating ourselves from the support of other Christians, we will be more susceptible to doubts and negative influences (both human and demonic). We need the prayer shield of our Christian friends and family members to help us continue when we feel alone and when the enemy tempts us to give up Our Lord as he did Jesus Christ. Eventually, people will notice you are not eating. However, I have found that unless you see them daily, they do not consider your skipped meal much of a concern. If you are asked, nonbelievers may be satisfied by such a brief answer as, "I have other plans for lunch today." Or Christians should be satisfied when you answer that you are fasting today.

If friends and family express concern for your health, ease their fears by telling them that you will stop fasting the moment you feel you are harming your body or if the Lord leads you to end your fast. Tell them you are fasting under your doctor's care, which I urge you to do if you have any question concerning your health.

There is usually no reason for telling strangers or casual acquaintances that you are fasting. If you do, they may subject you to a lot of questions that you may not want to answer. But in any case, use your best judgment and the Lord's leading in telling people about your fast.

How to Make Your Spiritual Experience the Best it can Be

Receiving God's best blessing from a fast requires solid commitment. Arranging special time each day with God is absolutely crucial in attaining intimate communion with the Father. You must devote yourself to seeking God's face, even (and especially) during those times in which you feel weak, vulnerable, or irritable. Read His Word and pray during what were mealtimes. Meditate on Him when you awake in the night. Sing praises to Him whenever you please. Focus on your Heavenly Father and make every act one of praise and worship. God will enable you to experience His command to "pray without ceasing" as you seek His presence.

As you enter this time of heightened spiritual devotion, be aware that Satan will do everything he can to pull you away from your prayer and Bible reading time. When you feel the enemy trying to discourage you, immediately go to God in prayer and ask Him to strengthen your resolve in the face of difficulties and temptations.

The enemy makes you a target because he knows that fasting is the most powerful of all Christian disciplines and that God may have something very special to show you as you wait upon Him and seek His face. Satan does not want you to grow in your faith, and will do anything from making you hungry and grumpy to bringing up trouble in your family or at work to stop you. Make prayer your shield against such attacks.

My major reason for fasting is for personal revival, revival for our nation, for the world and for the fulfillment of the Great Commission by the end of the year 2000. But praying for our own needs and interceding for others are also important reasons to fast and pray. Bring your personal needs before the Lord, intercede for your loved ones, your friends, your church, your pastor, your community, your nation, and the world. By your prayers of humility, as you fast, you will help the Great Commission be fulfilled.

However, do not become so caught up in praying for yourself and others that you forget about simply reverencing and praising God. True spiritual fasting focuses on God. Center your total being on Him, your attitudes, your actions, your motives, desires, and words. This can only take place if God and His Holy Spirit are at the center of our attention. Confess your sins as the Holy Spirit brings them to your attention and continue to focus on God and God alone so that your prayers may be powerful and effective.

A renewed closeness with God and a greater sensitivity to spiritual things are usually the results of a fast. Do not be disappointed if you do not have a "mountaintop experience," as some do. Many people who have successfully completed extended fasts tell of feeling a nearness to God that they have never before known, but others who have honestly sought His face report no particular outward results at all. For others, their fast was physically, emotionally, and spiritually grueling, but they knew they had been called by God to fast, and they completed the fast unto Him as an act of worship; God honored that commitment.

Your motive in fasting must be to glorify God, not to have an emotional experience, and not to attain personal happiness. When your motives are right, God will honor your seeking heart and bless your time with Him in a very special way.

Maintaining Nutritional Balance

I know the prospect of going without food for an extended period of time may be of concern to some. But there are ways to ensure that your body is getting the nutrients it needs so you can remain safe and healthy during your fast.

For an extended fast, I recommend water and fruit and vegetable juices. The natural sugars in juices provide energy, and the taste and strength are motivational to continue your fast. Try to drink fresh juices, if possible. Off-the-shelf juice products are acceptable, as long as they are 100% juice with no sugar or other additives.

If you are beginning a juice fast, there are certain juices you may wish to avoid and certain ones that are especially beneficial. Because of their acid content, most nutritionists do not advise orange or tomato juice (these are better tolerated if mixed with equal portions of water). The best juices are fresh carrot, grape, celery, apple, cabbage, or beet. They also recommend "green drinks" made from green leafy vegetables because they are excellent "de-toxifiers."

Fruit juices are "cleansers" and are best taken in the morning. Since vegetable juices are "restorers" and "builders," they are best taken in the afternoon.

I usually dedicate a portion of my 40-day fast to a special liquid formula, which I have found to be effective over many years. A few recipes and my comments are on this page, as well as a helpful schedule.

One gallon distilled water
1-1/2 cup lemon juice
3/4-cup pure maple syrup
1/4-teaspoon cayenne pepper.

The lemon juice adds flavor and vitamin C, the maple syrup provides energy, and the cayenne pepper-an herb-acts to open small blood vessels which, I believe, helps the body as it cleanses itself of stored toxins. (A word of caution: although I use this formula with no ill effects, cayenne pepper could cause severe physical reactions in persons with a specific allergy to this herb.)

My favorite juice is a mixture of 100% pure white grape juice and peach juice. The juice is available in frozen cans under the Welch label. Most knowledgeable nutritionists recommend:

- Watermelon-just put it in the blender without adding water.
- Fresh apple juice
- Green juice-blend celery, romaine lettuce, and carrots in equal proportions. (Vegetable juices like this one are important, for they supply the electrolytes necessary for proper heart function!)

Some nutritionists recommend warm broth, especially if you live in a colder climate. You may find their recipes helpful:

- Boil sliced potatoes, carrots, and celery in water. Do not add salt. After about a half-hour, drain off the water and drink.
- Gently boil three carrots, two stalks of celery, one turnip, two beats, a half head of cabbage, a quarter of a bunch of parsley, a quarter of an onion, and a half clove of garlic. Drain off the broth and drink up to two or three times daily.

You may find the following daily schedule helpful during your fast. I recommend you print it and keep it handy throughout your fast.

- 5:00 a.m. - 8:00 a.m.
Fruit juices, preferably freshly squeezed or blended, diluted in 50 percent distilled water if the fruit is acid. Orange, apple, pear, grapefruit, papaya, grape, peach or other fruits are good.
- 10:30 a.m. - noon
Green vegetable juice made from lettuce, celery, and carrots in three equal parts.
- 2:30 p.m. - 4:00 p.m.
Herb tea with a drop of honey. Make sure that it is not black tea or tea with a stimulant.
- 6:00 p.m. - 8:30 p.m.
Broth from boiled potatoes, celery, and carrots (no salt).

I suggest that you do not drink milk because it is a pure food and therefore a violation of the fast. Any product containing protein or fat, such as milk or soy-based drinks, should be avoided. These products will restart the digestion cycle and you will again feel hunger pangs. Also, for health reasons, stay away from caffeinated beverages such as coffee, tea, or cola. Because caffeine is a stimulant, it has a more powerful effect on your nervous system when you abstain from food. This works both against the physical and spiritual aspects of the fast.

Another key factor in maintaining optimum health during a fast is to limit your physical activity. Exercise only moderately, and rest as much as your schedule will permit (this especially applies to extended fasts). Short naps are helpful as well. Walking a mile or two each day at a moderate pace is acceptable for a person in good health, and on a juice fast. However, no one on a water fast should exercise without the supervision of a fasting specialist.

What Physical Effects to Expect

Although fasting can be an indescribable blessing, it is not always easy for everyone. In this time of discipline, self-sacrifice and reflection, do not be surprised if you experience mental and physical discomforts.

To begin, you may experience some inner conflict when you deny yourself the pleasure of eating delicious food. Any sort of fast may sometimes leave you feeling impatient and irritable. During a 3-day fast, this struggle can intensify toward the end of the second day. That seems to be a favorite time for the "self" to rise up and say, "This is as far as I want to go. I have done enough."

Physical Effects	Reliefs
<p>Hunger Pangs These are greatest usually during the first three days of the fast. Your body is adjusting from using the food in your digestive tract (which remains about three days) to consuming stored fats.</p>	<p>Psyllium Bulk Help eliminate hunger pangs and also aids in cleansing the body. Several capsules can be taken throughout the day with plenty of water. Silymarin tablets may also be helpful, for they are believed to protect and enhance the cleansing of the liver.</p>
<p>Coldness, bad breath and heightened body odor, changes in elimination (constipation or diarrhea), light-headedness, changes in sleeping and dreaming patterns, aches and pains. A white-coated tongue at the beginning of a fast may be a part of the body's pattern of throwing off toxins. Also expect to go the the bathroom often (you will be drinking lots of water!)</p>	<p>After the first two weeks of an extended fast, many of these symptoms subside. Continuing aches in a certain area of the body usually means elimination of fatty tissue is going on in that area, which is not harmful. However, any extensive pain should be examined immediately. YOU SHOULD STOP FASTING IF YOU ARE EXPERIENCING SEVERE PAIN OR SWELLING.</p>
<p>Headaches or stomachaches may be a result of salt, sugar, or caffeine withdrawal.</p>	<p>Eliminating those items from your diet prior to fasting is the best way to avoid these pains.</p>
<p>Lower back pain may indicate that you are dehydrating</p>	<p>Drink more fluids</p>
<p>dizziness may be caused by a sudden change in position, such as rising suddenly from a chair.</p>	<p>Stop for a second or two, then recover. Move slowly. (A word of caution: these conditions may be symptoms of other problems requiring medical attention.)</p>
<p>Minor fasting discomfort</p>	<p>Take one teaspoon of psyllium seed powder morning and evening. Mixed in lukewarm water, it becomes like Jell-O. This powder will hasten the elimination of toxins from your colon and help to prevent headaches and dizziness for most healthy people. Alfalfa tablets can help control bad breath and cleanse the system. Two tablets at a time can be taken several times a day.</p>

In my desire to be absolutely faithful to my first 40-day fast, I stopped taking my usual vitamins and minerals. However during subsequent fasts, I have felt strongly impressed to continue my vitamin and herbal therapy and also using psyllium. I do this to keep my "temple" healthy while continuing to deny myself the pleasure of eating solid food.

During your fast, you may have your struggles, discomforts, spiritual victories, and failures. In the morning you may feel like you are on top of the world, but by evening you may be wrestling with the flesh-sorely tempted to raid the refrigerator and counting how many more days are left in your fast. This is especially

true if you are new at fasting. To counteract temptations like these, take extra time with the Lord to spend with God. Step outside for fresh air and a moderate walk of a mile or two, and talk to the Lord as you walk along. And in the process always keep on sipping water or juice frequently during your waking hours

How to Finish Your Fast

All the experts agree that "breaking the fast" is the critical phase of fasting. While your body is in the resting mode, your stomach shrinks and your intestines become idle, so solid food must be re-introduced very slowly to avoid kidney failure or digestive distress. In fact, after a 40-day fast, you should make a careful transition for at least three days before returning to eating meats or fats or normal foods.

Further, if you end your fast gradually, the beneficial physical and spiritual effects will linger for days. But if you rush into solid foods, you may lose much of your deep sense of peace and experience physical problems such as diarrhea, sickness, fainting, and frankly even death in some cases, due to shock!

Dr. Paul Bragg and his daughter Patricia have conducted fasting clinics for many years. Their book, *The Miracle of Fasting*, gives a specific daily food plan for breaking a 7-day fast that could be adapted and stretched out over several more days for a 40-day fast.

Breaking a Seven-Day Fast

5 o'clock as you end your 7th day of the fast

Peel four or five medium-sized tomatoes - cut them up, bring them to a boil and then turn off the heat. When they are cool enough to eat, have as many as you desire.

Morning of the 8th day

Salad of grated carrots and grated cabbage, with half an orange squeezed over it.

Bowl of steamed greens and peeled tomatoes (spinach, Swiss chard, or mustard greens). Bring the greens to a boil, then turn off the heat.

You may eat two slices of 100 percent whole-wheat bread, which has been toasted until it is thoroughly dry-this is called "Melba toast." After it has been cooled, the toast should be so dry that it would powder if you squeezed it in the palm of your hand. As I have stated, this first food should be in the morning.

During the day, you may have all the distilled water you wish to drink.

For dinner, you may have a salad of grated carrots, chopped celery and cabbage, with orange juice for dressing. This will be followed by two cooked vegetables, one such as spinach, kale, shard, or mustard greens, and one such as string beans, carrots, steamed celery, okra, or squash. You may have two pieces of whole-grain "Melba toast." These meals are not to contain oils of any kind.

Morning of the 9th day

You may have a dish of any kind of fresh fruit, such as banana, pineapple, orange, sliced grapefruit, or sliced apples. You may sprinkle this with two tablespoonfuls of raw wheat germ, and sweeten it with honey, but not over one tablespoonful

At noon you may have a salad of grated carrots, cabbage, and celery, with one cooked vegetable and one slice of "Melba toast."

At dinner you may have a salad dish of lettuce, watercress, parsley, and tomatoes, and two cooked vegetables.

Most experts agree that breaking a fast with vegetables, either steamed or raw, is best. Your stomach is smaller now, so eat lightly. Stop before you feel full. Stay away from starches like pastas, potatoes, rice, or bread (except for "Melba toast") for at least a week. Also avoid meats, dairy products, and any fats or oils for a week or more. Introduce them very slowly and in small amounts.

Extended fasts are not the only fasts which need to be ended with caution. Even a 3-day fast requires reasonable precautions. It is wise to start with a little soup - something thin and nourishing such as vegetable broth made from onion, celery, potatoes, and carrots - and fresh fruits such as watermelon and cantaloupe.

In terms of resuming any sort of exercise routine, the advice is the same. Start out slowly, allowing time for your body to re-adjust to its usual regime.

7 Steps to Fasting and Prayer

These pages are printed in their entirety and are unedited, taken from Dr. Bill Bright's Website:
<http://www.billbright.com/7steps/>

A Message from Dr. Bill Bright

I believe the power of fasting as it relates to prayer is the spiritual atomic bomb that our Lord has given us to destroy the strongholds of evil and usher in a great revival and spiritual harvest around the world.

Increasingly I have been gripped with a growing sense of urgency to call upon God to send revival to our beloved country. In the spring and summer of 1994, I had a growing conviction that God wanted me to fast and pray for forty days for revival in America and for the fulfillment of the Great Commission in obedience to our Lord's command.

At first I questioned, "Is this truly God's call for me?" Forty days was a long time to go without solid food. But with each passing day, His call grew stronger and more clear. Finally, I was convinced. God was calling me to fast, and He would not make such a call without a specific reason or purpose. With this conviction, I entered my fast with excitement and expectancy mounting in my heart, praying, "Lord, what do you want me to do?"

I believe such a long fast was a sovereign call of God because of the magnitude of the sins of America and of the Church. The Lord impressed that upon my heart, as well as the urgent need to help accelerate the fulfillment of the Great Commission in this generation.

As I began my fast, I was not sure I could continue for forty days. But my confidence was in the Lord to help me. Each day His presence encouraged me to continue. The longer I fasted, the more I sensed the presence of the Lord. The Holy Spirit refreshed my soul and spirit, and I experienced the joy of the Lord as seldom before. Biblical truths leaped at me from the pages of God's Word. My faith soared as I humbled myself and cried out to God and rejoiced in His presence.

This proved to be the most important forty days of my life. As I waited upon the Lord, the Holy Spirit gave me the assurance that America and much of the world will, before the end of the year 2000, experience a great spiritual awakening. This divine visit from heaven will kindle the greatest spiritual harvest in the history of the Church. But before God comes in revival power, the Holy Spirit will call millions of God's people to repent, fast, and pray in the spirit of 2 Chronicles 7:14:

If my people, who are called by my name, will humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn from their wicked ways, then I will hear from heaven and will forgive their sin and will heal their land.

The scope of this revival depends on how believers in America and the rest of the world respond to this call. I have spent fifty years studying God's Word and listening to His voice, and His message could not have been more clear.

This handy reference guide, *Seven Basic Steps to Successful Fasting and Prayer*, will help make your time with the Lord more spiritually rewarding. I encourage you to keep it with you during your fast and refer to it often because it gives easy-to-follow suggestions on how to begin your fast, what to do while you fast, and how to end your fast properly.

During my forty-day fast, God impressed me to pray that two million Christians in North America will fast for forty days by the end of the year 2000, and pray for national and worldwide revival and for the fulfillment of the Great Commission. I urge you to prayerfully consider this challenge.

Before you fast, I encourage you to read my book, *The Coming Revival: America's Call to Fast, Pray, and "Seek God's Face."* It will help equip you for the coming spiritual awakening

How to Begin Your Fast

How you begin and conduct your fast will largely determine your success. By following these seven basic steps to fasting, you will make your time with the Lord more meaningful and spiritually rewarding.

STEP 1: Set Your Objective

Why are you fasting? Is it for spiritual renewal, for guidance, for healing, for the resolution of problems, for special grace to handle a difficult situation? Ask the Holy Spirit to clarify His leading and objectives for your prayer fast. This will enable you to pray more specifically and strategically.

Through fasting and prayer we humble ourselves before God so the Holy Spirit will stir our souls, awaken our churches, and heal our land according to 2 Chronicles 7:14. Make this a priority in your fasting.

STEP 2: Make Your Commitment

Pray about the kind of fast you should undertake. Jesus implied that all of His followers should fast (Matthew 6:16-18; 9:14,15) For Him it was a matter of when believers would fast, not if they would do it. Before you fast, decide the following up front:

- How long you will fast - one meal, one day, a week, several weeks, forty days (Beginners should start slowly, building up to longer fasts.)
- The type of fast God wants you to undertake (such as water only, or water and juices; what kinds of juices you will drink and how often)
- What physical or social activities you will restrict
- How much time each day you will devote to prayer and God's Word

Making these commitments ahead of time will help you sustain your fast when physical temptations and life's pressures tempt you to abandon it.

STEP 3: Prepare Yourself Spiritually

The very foundation of fasting and prayer is repentance. Unconfessed sin will hinder your prayers. Here are several things you can do to prepare your heart:

- Ask God to help you make a comprehensive list of your sins.
- Confess every sin that the Holy Spirit calls to your remembrance and accept God's forgiveness (1 John 1:9).
- Seek forgiveness from all whom you have offended, and forgive all who have hurt you (Mark 11:25; Luke 11:4; 17:3,4).

- Make restitution as the Holy Spirit leads you.
- Ask God to fill you with His Holy Spirit according to His command in Ephesians 5:18 and His promise in 1 John 5:14,15.
- Surrender your life fully to Jesus Christ as your Lord and Master; refuse to obey your worldly nature (Romans 12:1,2).
- Meditate on the attributes of God, His love, sovereignty, power, wisdom, faithfulness, grace, compassion, and others (Psalm 48:9,10; 103:1-8, 11-13).
- Begin your time of fasting and prayer with an expectant heart (Hebrews 11:6).
- Do not underestimate spiritual opposition. Satan sometimes intensifies the natural battle between body and spirit (Galatians 5:16,17).

STEP 4: Prepare Yourself Physically

Fasting requires reasonable precautions. Consult your physician first, especially if you take prescription medication or have a chronic ailment. Some persons should never fast without professional supervision.

Physical preparation makes the drastic change in your eating routine a little easier so that you can turn your full attention to the Lord in prayer.

- Do not rush into your fast.
- Prepare your body. Eat smaller meals before starting a fast. Avoid high-fat and sugary foods.
- Eat raw fruit and vegetables for two days before starting a fast

While You Fast

Your time of fasting and prayer has come. You are abstaining from all solid foods and have begun to seek the Lord. Here are some helpful suggestions to consider:

- Avoid drugs, even natural herbal drugs and homeopathic remedies. Medication should be withdrawn only with your physician's supervision.
- Limit your activity.
- Exercise only moderately. Walk one to three miles each day if convenient and comfortable.
- Rest as much as your schedule will permit.
- Prepare yourself for temporary mental discomforts, such as impatience, crankiness, and anxiety.
- Expect some physical discomforts, especially on the second day. You may have fleeting hunger pains, dizziness, or the "blahs." Withdrawal from caffeine and sugar may cause headaches. Physical annoyances may also include weakness, tiredness, or sleeplessness.

The first two or three days are usually the hardest. As you continue to fast, you will likely experience a sense of well-being both physically and spiritually. However, should you feel hunger pains, increase your liquid intake.

STEP 5: Put Yourself on a Schedule

For maximum spiritual benefit, set aside ample time to be alone with the Lord. Listen for His leading. The more time you spend with Him, the more meaningful your fast will be.

Morning

- Begin your day in praise and worship.
- Read and meditate on God's Word, preferably on your knees.

- Invite the Holy Spirit to work in you to will and to do His good pleasure according to Philippians 2:13.
- Invite God to use you. Ask Him to show you how to influence your world, your family, your church, your community, your country, and beyond.
- Pray for His vision for your life and empowerment to do His will.

Noon

- Return to prayer and God's Word.
- Take a short prayer walk.
- Spend time in intercessory prayer for your community's and nation's leaders, for the world's unreached millions, for your family or special needs.

Evening

- Get alone for an unhurried time of "seeking His face."
- If others are fasting with you, meet together for prayer.
- Avoid television or any other distraction that may dampen your spiritual focus.

When possible, begin and end each day on your knees with your spouse for a brief time of praise and thanksgiving to God. Longer periods of time with our Lord in prayer and study of His Word are often better spent alone.

A dietary routine is vital as well. Dr. Julio C. Ruibal - a nutritionist, pastor, and specialist in fasting and prayer - suggests a daily schedule and list of juices you may find useful and satisfying. Modify this schedule and the drinks you take to suit your circumstances and tastes.

5 a.m. - 8 a.m.

- Fruit juices, preferably freshly squeezed or blended and diluted in 50 percent distilled water if the fruit is acid. Apple, pear, grapefruit, papaya, watermelon, or other fruit juices are generally preferred. If you cannot do your own juicing, buy juices without sugar or additives.

10:30 a.m. - noon

- Fresh vegetable juice made from lettuce, celery, and carrots in three equal parts.

2:30 p.m. - 4 p.m.

- Herb tea with a drop of honey. Avoid black tea or any tea with caffeine.

6 p.m. - 8:30 p.m.

- Broth made from boiling potatoes, celery, and carrots with no salt. After boiling about half an hour, pour the water into a container and drink it.

Tips on Juice Fasting

- Drinking fruit juice will decrease your hunger pains and give you some natural sugar energy. The taste and lift will motivate and strengthen you to continue.
- The best juices are made from fresh watermelon, lemons, grapes, apples, cabbage, beets, carrots, celery, or leafy green vegetables. In cold weather, you may enjoy a warm vegetable broth.
- Mix acidic juices (orange and tomato) with water for your stomach's sake.
- Avoid caffeinated drinks. And avoid chewing gum or mints, even if your breath is bad. They stimulate digestive action in your stomach.

Breaking Your Fast

When your designated time for fasting is finished, you will begin to eat again. But how you break your fast is extremely important for your physical and spiritual well-being.

STEP 6: End Your Fast Gradually

Begin eating gradually. Do not eat solid foods immediately after your fast. Suddenly reintroducing solid food to your stomach and digestive tract will likely have negative, even dangerous, consequences. Try several smaller meals or snacks each day. If you end your fast gradually, the beneficial physical and spiritual effects will result in continued good health.

Here are some suggestions to help you end your fast properly:

- Break an extended water fast with fruit such as watermelon.
- While continuing to drink fruit or vegetable juices, add the following:
 - First day: Add a raw salad.
 - Second day: Add baked or boiled potato, no butter or seasoning.
 - Third day: Add a steamed vegetable.
 - Thereafter: Begin to reintroduce your normal diet.
- Gradually return to regular eating with several small snacks during the first few days. Start with a little soup and fresh fruit such as watermelon and cantaloupe. Advance to a few tablespoons of solid foods such as raw fruits and vegetables or a raw salad and baked potato.

A Final Word

STEP 7: Expect Results

If you sincerely humble yourself before the Lord, repent, pray, and seek God's face; if you consistently meditate on His Word, you will experience a heightened awareness of His presence (John 14:21). The Lord will give you fresh, new spiritual insights. Your confidence and faith in God will be strengthened. You will feel mentally, spiritually, and physically refreshed. You will see answers to your prayers.

A single fast, however, is not a spiritual cure-all. Just as we need fresh infillings of the Holy Spirit daily, we also need new times of fasting before God. A 24-hour fast each week has been greatly rewarding to many Christians.

It takes time to build your spiritual fasting muscles. If you fail to make it through your first fast, do not be discouraged. You may have tried to fast too long the first time out, or you may need to strengthen your understanding and resolve. As soon as possible, undertake another fast until you do succeed. God will honor you for your faithfulness.

I encourage you to join me in fasting and prayer again and again until we truly experience revival in our homes, our churches, our beloved nation, and throughout the world.

How to Experience and Maintain Personal Revival

1. Ask the Holy Spirit to reveal any unconfessed sin in your life.
2. Seek forgiveness from all whom you have offended, and forgive all who have hurt you. Make restitution where God leads.
3. Examine your motives in every word and deed. Ask the Lord to search and cleanse your heart daily.

4. Ask the Holy Spirit to guard your walk against complacency and mediocrity.
5. Praise and give thanks to God continually in all ways on all days, regardless of your circumstances.
6. Refuse to obey your carnal (worldy) nature (Galatians 5:16,17).
7. Surrender your life to Jesus Christ as your Savior and Lord. Develop utter dependence on Him with total submission and humility.
8. Study the attributes of God.
9. Hunger and thirst after righteousness (Matthew 5:6).
10. Love God with all of your heart, soul, and mind (Matthew 22:37).
11. Appropriately receive the continual fullness and control of the Holy Spirit by faith on the basis of God's command (Ephesians 5:18) and promise (1 John 5:14,15).
12. Read, study, meditate on, and memorize God's holy, inspired, inerrant Word daily (Colossians 3:16).
13. Pray without ceasing (1 Thessalonians 5:17).
14. Fast and pray one 24-hour period each week. Prayerfully consider becoming one of the two million Christians who will fast for forty days before the end of the year 2000.
15. Seek to share Christ daily as a way of life.
16. Determine to live a holy, godly life of obedience and faith.
17. Start or join a home or church Bible study group that emphasizes revival and a holy life.

Six Vital Questions About Prayer

Q: What Is Prayer?

Simply put, prayer is communicating with God. Real prayer is expressing our devotion to our heavenly Father, inviting Him to talk to us as we talk to Him.

Q: Who Can Pray?

Anyone can pray, but only those who walk in faith and obedience to Christ can expect to receive answers to their prayers.

Contact with God begins when we receive Jesus into our lives as Savior and Lord (John 14:6). Praying with a clean heart is also vital to successful prayer. We cannot expect God to answer our prayers if there is any unconfessed sin in our life or if we are harboring an unforgiving spirit (Psalm 66:18; Mark 11:25). For God to answer our prayers, we must have a believing heart and ask according to His will (Matthew 9:29; 21:22; 1 John 5:14,15).

Q: Why Are We to Pray?

God's Word commands us to pray (Luke 18:1; Acts 6:4; Mark 14:38; Philippians 4:6; Colossians 4:2; 1 Timothy 2:1,2).

We pray to have fellowship with God, receive spiritual nurture and strength to live a victorious life, and maintain boldness for a vital witness for Christ.

Prayer releases God's great power to change the course of nature, people, and nations.

Q: To Whom Do We Pray?

We pray to the Father in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ through the ministry of the Holy Spirit. when we pray to the Father, our prayers are accepted by Jesus Christ and interpreted to God the Father by the Holy Spirit (Romans 8:26, 27,34).

Q: When Should We Pray?

God's Word commands us to "Pray continually" (1 Thessalonians 5:17). We can be in prayer throughout the day, expressing and demonstrating our devotion to God as we go about our daily tasks.

It is not always necessary to be on our knees, or even in a quiet room to pray. God wants us to be in touch with Him constantly wherever we are. We can pray in the car, while washing the dishes, or while walking down the street.

Q: What Should We Include in Our Prayers?

Although prayer cannot be reduced to a formula, certain basic elements should be included in our communication with God: Adoration, Confession, Thanksgiving, Supplication (ACTS).

A-Adoration

To adore God is to worship and praise Him, to honor and exalt Him in our heart and mind and with our lips.

C-Confession

When our discipline of prayer begins with adoration, the Holy Spirit has opportunity to reveal any sin in our life that needs to be confessed.

T-Thanksgiving

An attitude of thanksgiving to God, for who He is and for the benefits we enjoy because we belong to Him, enables us to recognize that He controls all things - not just the blessings, but the problems and adversities as well. As we approach God with a thankful heart, He becomes strong on our behalf.

S-Supplication

Supplication includes petition for our own needs and intercession for others. Pray that your inner person may be renewed, always sensitive to and empowered by the Holy Spirit. Pray for others - your spouse, your children, your parents, neighbors, and friends; our nation and those in authority over us. Pray for the salvation of souls, for a daily opportunity to introduce others to Christ and to the ministry of the Holy Spirit, and for the fulfillment of the Great Commission.